

A  
0  
0  
0  
0  
0  
2  
5  
5  
5  
5  
0



UC SOUTHERN REGIONAL LIBRARY FACILITY

MAJMEAN

na

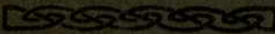
AEOLZE



leir na

MAJMEAN

MAJMEAN.



THIRD EDITION—REVISED.



E. Andrews









Irish grammar, by the  
Christian Brothers



THIRD EDITION—REVISED.

CAHILL & CO., Printers, Dublin.

## PREFACE.

---

THE Grammar of Spoken Irish presents many difficulties owing to the forms peculiar to different places, but as the literary usage embraces the dialects current in different localities, save a few archaic survivals, the literary usage has been adopted as the standard of this grammar.

Modern Irish may be said to date from the end of the 16th, or the beginning of the 17th century. At the commencement of the modern period many forms are found which belong to an earlier period, and many forms which have since grown obsolete, side by side with those by which they have since been replaced. We have deemed it advisable not to introduce into this grammar any obsolete grammatical forms, how prominent soever they may be in early modern literature. However, as students preparing for public examinations are frequently required to read the works of early modern authors, we have added in the present edition an appendix containing the verb-system of early modern Irish. Such early modern grammatical forms as survive only within a small area are not given in the large type; on the other hand, those grammatical forms generally found in literature, and which are still in use in any one of the three Irish-speaking Provinces, are given in the large print in preference to those more generally used by Irish speakers, but which are not found in literary works. It is hoped that this method may help to popularise Irish literature, and to reconcile in some degree the slight discrepancies which exist between the spoken and the literary usages.

In the present Grammar the letters *t*, *n*, and *p* are reckoned among the aspirable consonants, and *ph* is omitted

from the eclipsable ones. The declension of verbal nouns is transferred from the third declension to the chapter on the verbs. A collection of heteroclite nouns is inserted. The usual declension of the personal pronouns is not employed, and the terms Conjunctive and Disjunctive pronouns are adopted. The naming of the four principal parts of an Irish verb, the treatment of the Autonomus form of conjugation, the rejection of compound prepositions, infinitive mood, and present participle form a few of the features of this grammar. Among the appendices will be found lists of words belonging to the various declensions, of verbs of beth conjugation, and of irregular verbal nouns.

Many of the rules have been taken from the "O'Growney Series" and from the "Gaelic Journal." The grammars of Neilson, O'Donovan, Bourke, Craig, and of many other authors, have been consulted. The chapter on the classification of the uses of the prepositions is based on Dr. Atkinson's edition of Keating's *Uí Bhoir-ghaolta an Búir*. Some of the sentences which illustrate the rules have been culled, with the author's permission, from the *Mion-Caint* of the Rev. Peter O'Leary, P.P.

In the present edition the enunciation of the rule *Caol le caol 7 leathan le leathan* has been modified so as to bring it more into harmony with the spoken language. The sections on the Relative pronouns, Demonstrative pronouns, Adverbs, and Conjunctions have been greatly enlarged and improved. A large collection of Idiomatic expressions and an exhaustive Index have been also added.

The Christian Brothers acknowledge with pleasure their indebtedness to Mr. John McNeill, B.A., and Rev. Peter O'Leary, P.P., for their generous and invaluable aid in the production of this grammar. To Mr. R. J. O'Mulrenin, M.A., Mr. J. H. Lloyd, to Mr. Shortall, and to many other friends their best thanks are due, and gratefully tendered.



# CONTENTS.



	Page
The Letters           ...       ...       ...       ...	1
Sounds of the Vowels           ...       ...       ...	2
The Diphthongs       ...       ...       ...       ...	2
The Triphthongs     ...       ...       ...       ...	3
Consonants, Division of the           ...       ...       ...	4
,,       Combination of the           ...       ...       ...	5
Accent       ...       ...       ...       ...       ...	6
,,       Words distinguished by           ...       ...       ...	7
Obscure Sounds of the Vowels           ...       ...       ...	7
Aspiration, Explanation of       ...       ...       ...	9
,,       How marked           ...       ...       ...	10
,,       Rules for           ...       ...       ...	11
Eclipsis           ...       ...       ...       ...	13
,,       Rules for       ...       ...       ...       ...	15
Insertion of n           ...       ...       ...	16
,,       τ           ...       ...       ...	17
,,       h           ...       ...       ...	18
Attenuation and Broadening           ...       ...       ...	18
caol le caol 7 leatán le leatán           ...       ...       ...	19
Syncope, Explanation of       ...       ...       ...	20
,,       Examples of           ...       ...       ...	21
The Article       ...       ...       ...       ...	23
,,       Initial changes produced by           ...       ...       ...	23
Gender, Rules for       ...       ...       ...       ...	26
Cases, Number of       ...       ...       ...       ...	28
,,       Rules for formation of the           ...       ...       ...	28



	Page.
First Declension ... ..	30
„ Examples of vowel-changes ...	33
„ Irregular Genitive Singular ..	34
„ Irregular Nominative Plural	34
Second Declension ... ..	36
„ Examples of vowel-changes ...	37
„ Irregular Genitive Singular ...	39
„ Irregular Nominative Plural ...	39
Third Declension ... ..	41
„ Irregular Nominative Plural ...	44
Fourth Declension ... ..	45
„ Irregular Nominative Plural ...	46
Fifth Declension ... ..	47
Heteroclite Nouns ... ..	51
Irregular Nouns ... ..	52
The Adjective ... ..	56
„ First Declension ... ..	56
„ Second Declension ... ..	59
„ Third Declension ... ..	60
„ Fourth Declension ... ..	60
„ Aspiration of ... ..	61
„ Eclipsis of ... ..	62
„ Comparison of ... ..	63
„ Irregular Comparison ... ..	68
Numeral Adjectives ... ..	69
„ „ Notes on ... ..	71
Personal Numerals ... ..	73
Possessive Adjectives ... ..	74
Demonstrative „ ... ..	78
Indefinite „ ... ..	79
Distributive „ ... ..	82
Interrogative „ ... ..	82
Intensifying Particles ... ..	66
Emphatic „ ... ..	75

	Page.
Translation of "Some" ... ..	80
"    "    "Any" ... ..	81
The Pronoun	
Personal ... ..	83
Reflexive ... ..	84
Conjunctive and Disjunctive ... ..	85
Neuter Pronoun <i>εαὐ</i> ... ..	86
Prepositional ... ..	87
Relative ... ..	91
Demonstrative ... ..	93
Indefinite ... ..	94
Distributive ... ..	95
Interrogative ... ..	96
Reciprocal ... ..	97
The Verb	
Conjugations, Number of ... ..	98
"    Three forms of ... ..	99
"    Autonomous form of ... ..	100
Moods, Number of ... ..	102
Tenses, Number of ... ..	103
"    Various forms of the ... ..	104
Principal Parts of a Verb ... ..	106
"    Examples of ... ..	107
First Conjugation ... ..	108
"    Notes on Moods and Tenses of ... ..	112
Rule for Aspiration of <i>τ</i> of the Past Participle ... ..	116
Participle of Necessity ... ..	116
Derivative Participles ... ..	117
Declension of Verbal Nouns ... ..	118
Second Conjugation ... ..	118
Verbs in <i>ιῆ</i> and <i>υῆ</i> ... ..	119
Syncopated Verbs ... ..	120
Rules for formation of Verbal Noun ... ..	125
Irregular Verbs ... ..	127

	Page.
Irregular Verbs, Absolute and Dependent forms of	138
τάωμι	127
ίρ	133
δειν	136
ταῖδι	137
αβαιν	140
ῥαδ	142
ῥαξ	142
ῥευν	145
ῥεic	147
cloir or cluin	150
ταρ	150
τέιξ (τέιρό)	152
ίτ	154
ρίγιμ	155
Defective Verbs	
αρ, ὀαρ, ῥεωαρ	156
ἐάρτα, ὀ'φόβαιρ, ῥεωοιμ	157
Adverbs	157
Interrogative Words	160
"Up and Down," &c.	160
"This side, that side," &c.	162
"Over "	162
North, South, East, West	163
Compound or Phrase Adverbs	164
Days of the Week	167
"Head-foremost "	167
"However "	168
The Adverb "The "	168
Prepositions	168
Conjunctions	169
Use of ná and ná ῥο	170
Uses of μαρ	170
Interjections	171

<b>Word-Building</b>					
<b>Prefixes</b>	...	...	...	...	173
<b>Affixes</b>	...	...	...	...	176
<b>Diminutives</b>	...	...	...	...	178
" in in	...	...	...	...	179
" in an	...	...	...	...	179
" in ós	...	...	...	...	180
<b>Derivative Nouns</b>	...	...	...	...	181
<b>Compound Nouns</b>	...	...	...	...	182
<b>Derivative Adjectives</b>	...	...	...	...	186
<b>Verbs derived from Nouns</b>	...	...	...	...	190
" " <b>Adjectives</b>	...	...	...	...	191
<b>Syntax of the Article</b>	...	...	...	...	192
<b>Article used in Irish but not in English</b>	...	...	...	...	193
<b>Syntax of the Noun</b>	...	...	...	...	196
<b>Apposition</b>	...	...	...	...	197
<b>Collective Nouns</b>	...	...	...	...	197
<b>Personal Numerals</b>	...	...	...	...	198
<b>Personal Nouns</b>	...	...	...	...	199
<b>Syntax of the Adjective</b>	...	...	...	...	201
<b>Adjective used Attributively</b>	...	...	...	...	202
" <b>Predicatively</b>	...	...	...	...	204
<b>Numeral Adjectives</b>	...	...	...	...	205
<b>Dual Number</b>	...	...	...	...	209
<b>Possessive Adjectives</b>	...	...	...	...	211
<b>Syntax of the Pronoun</b>	...	...	...	...	213
<b>Relative Pronoun</b>	...	...	...	...	214
<b>Translation of the Genitive case of the English</b>					
<b>Relative</b>	...	...	...	...	216
<b>Syntax of the Verb</b>	...	...	...	...	218
<b>Uses of the Subjunctive Mood</b>	...	...	...	...	219
<b>Relative form of the Verb</b>	...	...	...	...	221
<b>Verbal Noun and its Functions</b>	...	...	...	...	224
<b>How to translate the English Infinitive</b>	...	...	...	...	226
<b>Definition of a Definite Noun</b>	...	...	...	...	235

	Page.
When to use the Verb IS ... ..	236
Position of Words with IS ... ..	240
Translation of the English Secondary Tenses ...	241
Prepositions after Verbs ... ..	243
Translation of the word "Not" ... ..	246
How to answer a question. Yes—No ... ..	246
Syntax of the Preposition ... ..	249
Translation of the Preposition "For" ... ..	256
"                    "          "Of" ... ..	260
Uses of the Preposition ... ..	262
Specimens of Parsing ... ..	284
Idioms ... ..	289
Idiomatic Phrases ... ..	305
The Autonomous form of the Irish Verb ... ..	315
Appendices	
i. List of Nouns belonging to First Declension	325
ii. List of Feminine Nouns ending in a broad consonant belonging to Second Declen- sion ... ..	327
iii. List of Nouns belonging to Third Declension	329
iv. List of Nouns belonging to Fifth Declension	333
v. List of Irregular Verbal Nouns ... ..	334
vi. List of Verbs of First Conjugation ... ..	336
vii. List of Syncopated Verbs ... ..	338
viii. Termination of the Regular Verbs in present- day usage ... ..	339
ix. Verb-System of Early Modern Irish ... ..	340
Index ... ..	343

## **PART I.—ORTHOGRAPHY.**

---

### CHAPTER I.

#### The Letters.

1. The Irish alphabet contains eighteen letters, five of which are vowels, the remaining thirteen are consonants.

The vowels are *Δ*, *e*, *ι*, *o*, *u*; and the consonants are *b*, *c*, *d*, *f*, *g*, *h*, *l*, *m*, *n*, *p*, *r*, *s*, *t*.

2. The vowels are divided into two classes.

(1) The broad vowels : *Δ*, *o*, *u*.

(2) The slender vowels : *e*, *ι*.

The vowels may be either long or short. The long vowels are marked by means of an acute accent (´) placed over the vowel, as *móir* (big) pronounced like the English word *more*; a short vowel has no accent, as *mot* (praise), pronounced like *mul* in the English word *mulberry*. Carefully distinguish between the terms "broad vowel" and "long vowel." The broad vowels (*Δ*, *o*, *u*) are not always long vowels, neither are the slender vowels (*e*, *ι*) always short.

In writing Irish we must be careful to mark the accents on long vowels. See words distinguished by accent, par. 14.

## 3.

## Sounds of the Vowels.

The Irish vowel	is sounded like	in the words
á long	au	naught as in báu (baudh), boat
à short	o	not „ glár (gloss), green
é long	æ	Gaelic „ cé (kír-æé), clay
e short	e	let „ ce (t'ye), hot
í	ee	feel „ máilín (mawil-eeen), little bag
í	i	hit „ fí (fir), men
ó	ō	note „ móir (mōir), big, large
o	ō, ū	dōne or mūch „ doras (dhur-us), a door
ú	oo	tool „ glúin (gloon), a knee
u	u	bull or put „ uirsa (ursu), a door-jamb

A short vowel at the end of an Irish word *is always pronounced.*

## The Digraphs.

4. The following list gives the sounds of the digraphs in Modern Irish. The first five are always long and require no accent. The others are sometimes long and sometimes short, hence the accent ought not to be omitted.\*

---

\* Since but few words, and these well-known, have eo short it is not usual to write the accent on eo long.



ia	is pronounced like ee-a as	Ḑia (dyee-a), God.
ua	„	oo-a „ fuar (foo-ar), cold.
eu or éa	„	ae „ feur (faer), grass.
ae	„	ae „ laete (lae-hě), days.
ao	„	ae „ dhaer (dhaer), dear.
eo	„	yó „ ceol (k-yól), music.
iú	„	ew „ fiú (few), worthy.
ái	„	au+ĩ „ cáin (kau-ín), a tax.
éi	„	ae+ĩ „ léim (lyae-ím), a leap.
ói	„	ō+ĩ „ móin (mō-in), a bog.
úi	„	oo+ĩ „ rúil (soo-íl), an eye.
eá	„	aa „ cairteán (kosh-laán*), a castle.]
fo	„	ee „ fíor (feer), true.
ai }	„	tair (thaish), damp.
ea }		fear (far), a man.
ei	„	e „ eile (el-ě), other.
oi	„	ũ+i „ toil (thũ-il), a will.
io }	„	fíor (fiss), knowledge.
ui }		uirge (ish-ge), water.
eo	„	ũ „ oeoc (d'yukh), a drink.
ái (= aithe),	„	ee „ coṑaí (kō-thee), coats.

### The Trigraphs.

5. There are six trigraphs in Irish. They are pronounced as follows:—

aoi	= ee	raoi (see)=a wise man.
eoí	= ō+ĩ	oṑeoitín (d'rō-il-een)=a wren.

---

\* Also pronounced kosh-laun.

eΔi	=	aa+i	caipteΔin(kosh-laain)=castles.
1Δi*	=	eea+i	1iΔig(lee-ih)=a physician.
11Δi†	=	oo+i	fuΔip(foo-ir)=found.
1ui	=	ew+i	ciuin(kew-ín)=calm.

### The Consonants.

6. The consonants are usually divided into two classes.

(1) The liquids—l, m, n, r.

(2) The mutes—b, c, d, f, s, p, q, t.

The letter h is not given, for h is not usually recognised as an Irish letter. It can be used only as a sign of aspiration, or at the beginning of a word, to separate two vowel sounds.

Some grammarians divide the consonants into labials, dentals, palatals, gutturals, sibilants, &c., according to the organs employed in producing the sound.

7. Every Irish consonant has two natural † sounds, according as it is *broad* or *slender*.

An Irish consonant is broad whenever it immediately precedes or follows a broad vowel (a, o, u) An Irish consonant is slender whenever it immediately precedes or follows a slender vowel (e, i).

8. The Irish consonants, when broad, have a much

\* Pronounced like ille in the French word fille.

† It cannot be properly represented by any English sound. It is somewhat like *oue* in the French word *ouest*.

‡ Other sounds will be treated of under the heading "Aspiration."

thicker sound than in English; e.g. *o* broad has nearly the sound of *th* in *thy*, i.e. *d+h*; *τ* broad has nearly the sound of *th* in *threw*, &c. When slender the Irish consonants (except *r*) have somewhat the same sound as in English; but when they are followed by a slender vowel, they are pronounced somewhat like the corresponding English consonant followed immediately by a *y*, e.g. *ceol* (*music*) is pronounced *k'yōl*; *beo* (*alive*)=*b'yō*.

It must not, however, be understood that there is a “*y* sound” in the Irish consonant. The peculiar sound of the Irish consonants when followed by a slender vowel is fairly well represented by the corresponding English consonant+an English “*y* sound.” In some parts of the country this “*y* sound” is not heard. The *y* is *only suggestive*, and is never heard as a distinct sound.

### Combination of the Consonants.

9. There are certain Irish consonants which, when they come together in the same word, do not coalesce, so that when they are uttered a very short obscure vowel sound is heard between them.

This generally occurs in the case of two liquids or a liquid and a mute. Thus *batb* (*dumb*) is pronounced *boll-ūv*; *teanb* (*a child*) is *lyan-ūv*; *borca* (*dark*) is *dhur-ūchū*; *marṣaḅ* (*a market*) is *mor-ūgu*.

The following combinations do not coalesce: *cn*, *lb*, *ls*, *lm*, *rb*, *rb*, *rs*, *rn*, *lm*, *nb*, *nm*, *rm*, *nc*, *rc*.

10. In some combinations, *one of the consonants is silent.*

ʋt is pronounced like tt

ʋn „ nn

nʋ „ nn

tn „ tt

Thus, coʋtaʋ (sleep) is pronounced kullŭ.

ceʋʋna (same) „ kaenŭ.

ʃpáʋʋa (ugly) „ graun-ŭ.

áitne (beauty) „ aul-yě.

Notice the difference between nʃ and ʃn.

long (a ship) is pronounced lŭng.

ʃnō (work) „ gŭn-ō.

11. Only three of the Irish consonants, viz. the liquids t, n, p, may be doubled. This doubling can take place only at the end or the middle of words, but never at the beginning. The double liquids have quite distinct sounds from the single, except in Munster, where, in some positions, double liquids influence vowels. This doubling at the end of a word does not denote shortness of the preceding vowel, as in English: in fact, it is quite the opposite; e. g. ea in pɛapɛp (better) is longer than ea in pɛap (a man).

In Irish there is no double consonant like the English *x*, which = *ks*.

### Accent.

12. The only accent sign used in writing Irish is the acute accent placed over the long vowels, and over

the long sounds of those diphthongs, which may be sometimes short. This sign is not intended to mark the syllable on which the stress of the voice falls.

13. In simple words of two syllables the tonic accent is usually upon the first syllable, as *Δγυρ* (óg-us), *and*; *úna* (oón-a), *Una*: but in derived words of two or more syllables the accented syllable varies in the different provinces.

In Munster the accent falls on the termination or second syllable; in Connaught it falls on the first syllable, or root; in Ulster the accent falls on the first syllable, as in Connaught, but the termination is unduly shortened. For instance, the word *carán*, a path, is pronounced *kos-aún* in Munster, *kós-aun* in Connaught, and *kós-ăn* in Ulster.

### The Obscure Vowel Sounds.

Whenever a vowel has neither a tonic nor a written accent, it has so transient and indistinct a pronunciation that it is difficult to distinguish one broad or one slender vowel from another; hence in ancient writings we find vowels substituted for each other indiscriminately: *e.g.*, the word *rlánuigte*, *saved*, is frequently spelled *rlánaigte*, *rlánoigte*, *rlánuigti*.

### 14. Words distinguished by their accent.

*Διτ*, a place.

*Διτ*, funny, peculiar (what one likes or wishes).

*Δρ*, our; slaughter.

*Δρ*, on; says.

bár, death.

cár, a case.

céao (ceuo), a hundred.

cóir, right.

cóirce, a coach.

oó, two.

fan, a wandering.

féar (feur), grass.

fór, yet.

i, she, her.

léar, clear, perceptible.

lón, food, provisions.

mála, a bag.

méar (meur), a finger.

mín, fine.

ná, than; not (*imperative*).

por, a rose.

rál, a heel.

réan (reun), happy.

rín, stretch.

rólár, comfort.

rúl, (*gen. plural of rúl*)  
eye.

té, a person.

bár (*or* bor), palm of the  
hand.

car, turn.

ceao, leave, permission

cóir, a crime.

cóirce, a jury.

oo, to.

fan, wait, stay.

féar, a man.

fór, a prop.

i, in.

léar, the sea.

lón, a blackbird.

mála, an eyebrow.

méar, quick, active.

mín, meal.

na, *the plural article*.

por, flax-seed.

rál, filth, dirt.

réan, old.

rín, that.

rólár, light.

rul, before (*with verbs*).

te, hot.



## CHAPTER II.

## Aspiration.

13. The word "aspiration" comes from the Latin verb "aspirare," to breathe; hence, when we say in Irish that a consonant is aspirated, we mean that the breath is not completely stopped in the formation of the consonant, but rather that the consonant sound is continuous.

Take, for example, the consonant *b*. To form this consonant sound the lips are pressed closely together for an instant, and the breath is forced out on separating the lips. Now, if we wish to get the sound of *b* aspirated (or *ḃ*), we must breathe the whole time whilst trying to form the sound of *b*; *i.e.* we must not close the lips entirely, and the resulting sound is like the English consonant *v*. Hence we say that the sound of *ḃ* (in some positions) is *v*.

The Irish letter *c* corresponds very much to the English *k*, and the breathed sound of *k* corresponds to the sound of *ḱ* (when broad). To sound the English *k*, we press the centre of the tongue against the palate, and cut off the breath completely for an instant. In pronouncing *ḱ* (when broad), all we have to do is to try to pronounce the letter *k* without *pressing* the tongue against the palate. The word *loch*, a lake, is pronounced somewhat like *luk*; but the tongue is not to touch the palate to form the *k*. The sound of *ḱ* aspirated when slender (especially when initial) is very well represented by the sound of "h" in "humane."

The Irish *g* (*ḡ*) has always the hard sound of *g* in the English word "go." In pronouncing this word we press the back of the tongue against the back of the palate. Now, to pronounce *ḡ* (and also *ḡ*) when broad, we must breathe in forming the sound of *g*, *i.e.* we must keep the tongue almost flat in the mouth.

The various sounds of the aspirated consonants are not given, as they are dealt with very fully in the second part of the "O'Growney Series." It may be well to remark, however, that the sound of *p* is like the sound of the Irish *p*, not the English *f*. The Irish *p* is sounded without the aid of the teeth.



16. Aspiration is usually marked by placing a dot over the consonant aspirated—thus, *ḃ*, *ċ*, *ȯ*. However, it is sometimes marked by an *h* after the consonant to be aspirated. This is the method usually adopted when Irish is written or printed in English characters.

17. In writing Irish only nine of the consonants, viz., *b*, *c*, *o*, *f*, *s*, *m*, *p*, *r*, and *t*, are aspirated; but in the spoken language all the consonants are aspirated.

### The Aspiration of *l*, *n*, *ŋ*.

18. The aspiration of the three letters *l*, *n*, *ŋ*, is not marked by any sign in writing, as is the aspiration of the other consonants (*ḃ* or *bḣ*); but yet they are aspirated in the spoken language. An example will best illustrate this point. The student has already learned that the word *leabhar*, a book, is pronounced *lyou-ar*. *mo*, my, aspirates an ordinary consonant, as *mo ḃó*, my cow; but it also aspirates *l*, *n*, *ŋ*, for *mo leabhar*, my book, is pronounced *mū low-ar* (i.e. the sound of *y* after *l* disappears).

Δ <i>leabhar</i> , his book,	is pronounced	ā low-ar.
Δ <i>leabhar</i> , her book,	„	ā lyou-ar.
Δ <i>leabhar</i> , their book,	„	ā lyow-ar.
Δ <i>neart</i> , his strength,	„	ā narth.
Δ <i>neart</i> , her strength,	„	ā nyarth.
&c., &c.		

19. When *l* broad begins a word it has a much thicker sound than in English. In sounding the English *l* the point of the tongue touches the palate just above the teeth; but to get the thick sound of the Irish *l* we must press the tongue firmly against the upper teeth (or we may protrude it between the teeth). Now, when such an *l* is aspirated it loses this thick sound, and is pronounced just as the English *l*.

20. It is not easy to show by an example the aspirated sound of *ŋ*; however, it is aspirated in the spoken language, and a slightly softer sound is produced.

### Rules for Aspirations.

21. We give here only the principal rules. Others will be given as occasion will require.

(a). The possessive adjectives *mo*, *my*; *ˆoo*, *thy*; and *a*, *his*, aspirate the first consonant of the following word, as *mo ˆbó*, *my cow*; *ˆoo mˆátair*, *thy mother*; *a ˆcapall*, *his horse*.

(b) The article aspirates a noun in the nominative and accusative feminine singular, and also in the genitive masculine singular unless the noun begins with *ˆo*, *ˆc*, or *ˆr*; *an ˆbean*, *the woman*; *ˆcá an ˆfeoil ˆgairc*, *the meat is salt*; *mac an ˆfíir*, *(the) son of the man*.

(c) In compound words the initial consonant of the second word is aspirated, except when the second word begins with *ˆo* or *ˆc*, and the first ends in one of the letters *ˆo*, *n*, *ˆc*, *ˆt*, *ˆr*. These five letters will be easily remembered, as they are the consonants of the word "*dental*s"; *ˆrean-mˆátair*, *a grandmother*; *cáˆt-báir*, *a helmet*; *ˆteit-ˆpinginn*, *a halfpenny*; but *ˆrean-ˆuine*, *an old person*; *ˆrean-teac*, *an old house*.

(d) The interjection *a*, the sign of the vocative case, causes aspiration in nouns of both genders and both numbers: *a ˆfíir*, *O man*; *a mˆnád*, *O women*; *a ˆSeumair*, *O James*.

(e) An adjective is aspirated when it agrees with a feminine noun in the nominative or accusative sin-

gular, or with a masculine noun in the genitive singular, and in the dative and vocative singular of both genders; also in the nominative plural when the noun ends in a slender consonant: as *bó bán*, a white cow; *mac an fíor mhóir*, (the) son of the big man; *ó'n mnaoi mhait*, from the good woman; *trí capaill móra*, three big horses.

(f) When a noun is immediately followed by an indefinite\* noun in the genitive case, singular or plural, the initial of the noun in the genitive is usually subject to precisely the same rules as if it were the initial of an adjective: e. g. *uó cipe*, a hen-egg (lit. an egg of a hen); *uóe cipe*, of a hen-egg; *cloic mhíne*, a stone of meal; *mín coipe*, oaten meal. The letters *o* and *c* are not aspirated after *o*, *n*, *c*, *l*, *r*; and *f* is often excepted, as the change in sound is so great.

(g) The initial of a verb is aspirated—(1) in the imperfect, the simple past, and the conditional, active voice; (2) after the particles *ní*, not; *má*, if; *mar*, as; and *ru*, before; (3) after the simple relative particle, expressed or understood: *bí ré*, he was; *oó fear rí*, she stood; *ní fuitim*, I am not; *ní béiró ré*, he will not be; *an té buaitear* or *an té a buaitear*, he (or the person) who strikes; *oó buaitfinn*, I would strike.

---

\*i.e. One not preceded by the definite article, possessive adj., &c.  
See par. 585.

(h) The initial of the word following *bá* or *buó* (the past tense and conditional of the verb *ír*) is usually aspirated.\*

*bá* *rháit* *tíom*, I liked or I would like.

*b' íearr* *teir*; he preferred or would prefer.

(i) The **simple prepositions** (except *as*, *ar*, *le*, *san*, *i*, and *go*) aspirate the initials of the nouns immediately following them: *pá cloic*, under a stone; *tug ré an leabhar do Seumas*, he gave the book to James.

## CHAPTER III.

### Eclipsis.

22. Eclipsis is the term used to denote the suppression of the sounds of certain Irish consonants by prefixing others produced by the same organ of speech.

There is usually a great similarity between the eclipsing letter and the letter eclipsed: thus, *p* is eclipsed by *b*; *t* is eclipsed by *d*, &c. If the student pronounce the letters *p* and *b*, *t* and *d*, he will immediately notice the similarity above referred to. Thus *b* and *d* are like *p* and *t*, except that they are pronounced with greater stress of the breath, or, more correctly, with greater vibration of the vocal chords.

\* Except in N. Connaught and Ulster, where this rule applies only to *b*, *p*, *m*, and sometimes *f*.

23. Seven\* of the consonants can be eclipsed, viz. *b, c, v, f, s, p, t*; the others cannot. Each consonant has its own eclipsing letter, and it can be eclipsed by no other. The eclipsing letter is written immediately before the eclipsed letter, and is sometimes, though not usually in recent times, separated from it by a hyphen, as *m-bārv* or *mbārv* (pronounced *maurdh*).

Formerly *éclipsis* was sometimes shown by doubling the eclipsed letter: thus, *Δ ττάρv*, their bull. Whenever a letter is eclipsed both should be retained in writing, although only one of them (the eclipsing one) is sounded.

24. It is much better not to consider the letter *r* as an eclipsable letter at all. *τ* replaces it in certain positions, but in none of those positions (dative singular excepted) in which the other letters are eclipsed. In fact, *r* is often replaced by *τ* when the previous word ends in *n*, as *an τρύτ*, the eye; *don τράτ*, one heel; *rean τ-Site*, old Sheelah; *burdean τρύτας*, a crowd, &c. Some, however, maintain that *r* is really eclipsed in these cases, because its sound is suppressed, and that of another consonant substituted; but as the substitution of *τ* follows the rules for aspiration rather than those for *éclipsis*, we prefer to class *r* with the non-eclipsable letters, *t, m, n, p, r*.

---

\*Eight is the number given in other grammars. They include the letter *r*.

25. b is eclipsed by m.

c	„	ḡ.
o	„	n.
f	„	ḡ.
ḡ	„	n.
p	„	ḡ.
t	„	o.

Δ mbápo (their poet) is pronounced a maurd.

Δ ḡcapall (their horse) „ a ḡópàl.

Δr noán (our poem) „ aur naun.

i ḡpuit (in blood) „ ă vwil.

Δ ngiotta (their servant) „ ang illũ.

i ḡpéin (in pain) „ a baen.

Δ ocatam (their land) „ a dhöl-űv.

Although n is used as the eclipsing letter of ḡ, the sound of n is not heard, but the simple consonant sound nḡ; therefore it would be more correct to say that ḡ is eclipsed by nḡ.

### Rules for Eclipsis.

26. (a) The possessive adjectives plural—Δr, our; ḡur, your; and Δ, their—eclipse the initial consonant of the next word, as Δr otiḡearna, our Lord; ḡur ḡcapall, your horse; Δ mbao, their boat.

(b) The article eclipses the initial consonant of the noun in the genitive plural (both genders): lámā na ḡ-ḡear, (the) hands of the men.

(c) A simple preposition followed by the article



and a noun in the singular causes eclipsis\* : *τὰ πέ ἀρ* *an ḡcapall*, he is on the horse; *ἐάνις πέ τεῖρ ἀρ* *b'pear*, he came with the man.

(d) The numeral adjectives *ρεᾶτ*, *οῦτ*, *ναοί*, and *οειῖ* (7, 8, 9, and 10), and their compounds, as 27, 28, 29, &c., cause eclipsis : *ρεᾶτ μβα*, seven cows; *οῦτ ḡκαοίρῖς*, eight sheep; *ρεᾶτ ὅ-φῖρ φῖεαο*, twenty-seven men.

(e) The initial consonant of a verb is eclipsed after the particles *ἐὰ*, not; *ἀν*, whether; *εἰ*, where; *ναῖ*, whether . . . not or that . . . not; *ḡ*, that; *μὴ*, unless; *ἵ*, if; and after the relative particle *ᾧ* when it is preceded by a preposition, or when it means "all that" or "what." The relative preceded by a preposition does not eclipse if the verb be past tense, except in the case of a very few verbs, which will be given later on : *ἀν ὀτῖνεαν τῦ*, do you understand? *ναῖ ὅφῖτ πέ τῖν*, isn't he sick? *εἰ ὅφῖτ πέ*, where is it? *οὐβᾶρτ πέ ḡ ὀτιοεᾶὸ πέ*, he said that he would come; *ἀν πεᾶρ ᾧ ᾧ ὅφῖτ ἀν λεᾶβᾶρ*,† the man who has the book.

### The Insertion of n.

27. (a) When a word begins with a vowel, the letter n is usually prefixed in all those cases in which a con-

---

\* In many places they prefer to aspirate in this case.

† In colloquial Irish this sentence would be, *ἀν πεᾶρ ᾧ ὅφῖτ ἀν λεᾶβᾶρ ᾧ*, or *ἀν πεᾶρ ḡ ὅφῖτ ἀν λεᾶβᾶρ ᾧ*.



sonant would be eclipsed: *e.g.*,  $\delta\mu$   $n$ - $\delta\mu\acute{\alpha}n$   $\tau\alpha\epsilon\tau\epsilon\alpha\mu\acute{\alpha}it$ , our daily bread;  $\epsilon\upsilon\alpha\iota\acute{o}$   $O\iota\acute{\rho}\acute{\iota}n$   $\xi\omicron$   $\tau\acute{\iota}\mu$   $n\alpha$   $n$ - $\acute{o}\xi$ , Oisín went to "the land of the young."

The  $n$  is sometimes omitted when the previous word ends in  $n$ : as  $\delta\mu$   $\alpha n$   $\alpha\omicron n\alpha\epsilon$ , or  $\delta\mu$   $\alpha n$   $n$ - $\alpha\omicron n\alpha\epsilon$ , at the fair.

(*b*) **Prepositions (except  $\tau\omicron$  and  $\tau\epsilon$ ) ending in a vowel prefix  $n$  to the possessive adjectives  $\alpha$ , his, her, or their; and  $\delta\mu$ , our;  $\tau\epsilon$   $n$ - $\alpha$   $\mu\acute{\alpha}\tau\alpha\mu$ , with his mother;  $\acute{o}$   $n$ - $\delta\mu$   $\tau\omicron\tau\acute{\iota}\mu$ , from our country.**

### The Insertion of $\tau$ .

28. (*a*) The article prefixes  $\tau$  to a masculine noun beginning with a vowel in the nominative and accusative singular: as  $\alpha n$   $\tau$ - $\alpha\tau\alpha\mu$ , the father.

(*b*) If a noun begins with  $r$  followed by a vowel, or by  $\iota$ ,  $n$ , or  $\mu$ , the  $r$  is replaced by  $\tau$  after the article in the nom. and acc. feminine sing. and the genitive masculine, and sometimes in the dative singular of both genders, as  $\alpha n$   $\tau\acute{\rho}\iota\upsilon\tau$ , the eye;  $\tau\epsilon\alpha\epsilon$   $\alpha n$   $\tau\acute{\rho}\alpha\delta\alpha\mu\tau$ , (the) house of the priest, *i.e.*; the priest's house;  $\tau\acute{\alpha}$   $\mu\acute{\iota}\alpha\theta$   $\alpha\varsigma$   $\tau\epsilon\alpha\epsilon\tau$   $\acute{o}'n$   $\tau\acute{\rho}\epsilon\iota\varsigma$ , they are coming from the hunt.

(*c*) This replacing of  $r$  by  $\tau$  occurs after the words  $\alpha\omicron n$ , one;  $\mu\epsilon\alpha n$ , old; and other words ending in  $n$ , as  $\alpha\omicron n$   $\tau\acute{\rho}\epsilon\alpha\tau\varsigma$   $\alpha\mu\acute{\alpha}n$ , one hunt.

### The Insertion of *n*.

29. The following is a pretty general rule for the insertion of *n* before vowels:—

“**Particles which neither aspirate nor eclipse, and which end in a vowel, prefix *n* to words beginning with a vowel.** Such is the case with the following:—*te*, with; *Δ*, her; *σο*, to; *οαρα*, second; *ρε*, six; *τρι*, three; *να*, the (in the nom., acc., and dative plural, also in the gen. singular feminine); *σο* before adverbs; the ordinal adjectives ending in *μα*, &c.”  
—*Gaelic Journal*.

---

## CHAPTER IV.

### Attenuation and Broadening.

30. *Attenuation* is the process of making a broad consonant slender. This is usually done by placing an *ι* immediately *before* the broad consonant, or an *ε* *after* it. Thus if we want to make the *ρ* of *μόρ* (big), slender, we place an *ι* before the *ρ*; thus *μόιρ*. If we wish to make the *ρ* of *ρὰο* (the termination of the 1st person singular future) slender, we write *ρεὰο*, &c.

31. *Broadening* is the process of making a slender consonant broad. This is often done by placing a *υ* immediately before the slender consonant, or an *Δ* after it; thus the verbal noun of derived verbs ending in *ιξ* is formed by adding *Δο*: before adding the *Δο* the *ξ* must be made broad; this is done by inserting

a *u*; míniḡ, explain; míniḡaṑ, explanation. If we want to make the *ṛ* of *ṛiṑ* (the termination of 3rd singular future) broad, we must write *ṛáirṑ*. *Buaitṛiṑ* *ṛé*, he will strike; *meaitṛiṑ* *ṛé*, he will deceive.

Whenever a slender consonant is preceded by an *i* which forms part of a diphthong or a triphthong, the consonant is usually made broad by dropping the *i*. Thus to broaden the *t* in *buaít*, or the *n* in *ḡoin*, we drop the *i* and then we get *buaít* and *ḡon*. The verbal nouns of *buaít* and *ḡoin* are *buaíaṑ* and *ḡonaṑ*.

---

## CHAPTER V.

*Caol le caol agus leathan le leathan;*

or,

**Slender with slender and broad with broad.**

32. When a single consonant, or two consonants which easily blend together, come between two vowels, both the vowels must be slender or both must be broad.

This is a general rule of Irish phonetics. It has already been stated that a consonant is broad when beside a broad vowel, and slender when beside a slender vowel; and also that the sounds of the consonants vary according as they are broad or slender: hence if we try to pronounce a word like *ṛeapín*, the *ṛ*, being beside the slender vowel *í*, should get its slender sound; but being also beside the broad vowel *a*, the *ṛ* should be broad. But a consonant cannot be slender and broad at the same time; hence, such spelling as *ṛeapín*, *málin*, and *éanín*, does not represent the correct sounds of the words, and,

therefore, the device adopted in writing Irish is to have both the vowels slender or both broad; e.g., *fiúin*, *máilín*, *éinín*.

This law of phonetics is not a mere *spelling* rule. If it were, such spelling as *peaiaoin*, *máiaoin*, *éanaoin*, would be correct. But no such spelling is used, because it does not represent the sounds of the words. The *ear* and not the *eye* must be the guide in the observance of the rule "*caol le caol 7 leathan le leathan*."

Two consonants may come together, one naturally broad and the other naturally slender. When this happens, Irish speakers, as a general rule, give the consonants their *natural* sounds, i.e., they keep the broad consonant broad, and the slender one slender. For instance, the *m* of *com* is naturally broad, and the *t* of *tion* is naturally slender. In the word *comtíon* (*fulfil*), the first syllable is always pronounced broad, although the word is usually written *com-tíon*. This is an instance of the abuse of the rule *caol le caol*. There are many words in which a single consonant may have a slender vowel at one side, and a broad vowel at the other; e.g., *apéir* (*last night*), *aníor* (*up*), *apiam* (*ever*), *apír* (*again*), etc.

Although the rule *caol le caol* had been much abused in modern spelling, in deference to modern usage we have retained the ordinary spelling of the words.

## CHAPTER VI.

### Syncope.

33. Whenever, in a word of two or more syllables an unaccented vowel or digraph occurs in the last syllable between a liquid (*l, m, n, r*) and any other consonant, or between two liquids, the unaccented vowel or digraph is elided whenever the word is lengthened by a grammatical inflection beginning with a vowel. This elision of one or more unaccented

vowels from the body of an Irish word is called *syncope*; and when the vowels have been elided the word is said to be *syncopated*.

34. The only difficulty in syncope is that it often involves slight changes in the other vowels of the syncopated word, in accordance with the rule *caol te caol*,

35. The following examples will fully exemplify the method of syncopating words.

(a) *Nouns.*

The genitive singular of—

maoin (morning)	is maíone	not maíone
obair (work)	„ oibre	„ obaire
carrraig (a rock)	„ cairrige	„ cairraige
pinginn } (a penny)	„ pingne	„ pinginne
piġinn }	„ piġne	„ piġinne
caðair (help)	„ caðra	„ caðara
catair (a city)	„ catraċ	„ cataraċ
larair (a flame)	„ larraċ	„ laraċ
olann (wool)	„ olna	„ olanna
buirdean (a company)	„ buirðne	„ buirðine
bpuigean (a palace)	„ bpuighe	„ bpuigine

(b) *Adjectives.*

The genitive singular feminine of—

բարօծիք (rich)	is բարօծիք	not բարօծիք
բաւօճեամաւ (princely)	,, բաւօճեամա	,, բաւօճեամա
ձւայնն (beautiful)	,, ձւե	,, ձւայնն
ձօրօնն (pleasant)	,, ձօրօն	,, ձօրօնն
ւարաւ (noble)	,, ւարե	,, ւարաւ

(c) *Verbs.*

Root.	Pres. Indicative.		
ԿՕԾԱԼ	ԿՕԾԼԱՄ, I sleep,	not	ԿՕԾԱԼԻՄ.
բԻՍԾԱԼ	բԻՍԾԼԱՄ, I walk,	,,	բԻՍԾԱԼԻՄ.
ԻՆՈՐ	ԻՆՈՐԻՄ, I tell,	,,	ԻՆՈՐԻՄ.
ԱԾԱՐ	ԱԾԻՐԱՄ, I say,	,,	ԱԾԱՐԻՄ.
ԼԱԾԱՐ	ԼԱԾԻՐԱՄ, I speak,	,,	ԼԱԾԱՐԻՄ.

The same contraction takes place in these and like verbs in all the finite tenses except the future and conditional (*old* forms). See par. 298.

A thorough knowledge of when and how Syncope takes place will obviate many difficulties

## **PART II.—ETYMOLOGY.**

---

36. There are nine parts of speech in Irish corresponding exactly to those in English.

### CHAPTER I.

#### The Article.

37. In Irish there is only one article, *an*, which corresponds to the English definite article, "the."

There is no indefinite article, so that *capall* means either "horse" or "a horse."

38. In all cases of the singular number the article has the form *an*, except in the genitive feminine, when it becomes *na*.

In all the cases of the plural it is *na*.

39. The article *an* had formerly an initial *r*. This *r* reappears after the following prepositions, *i*, *in*, or *ann*, *in*; *go*, *to*; *le*, *with*; *tré*, *through*. Although this *r* really belongs to the article, still it is usually written as part of the preposition; as *mr an leabhar*, in the book; *leir an breath*, with the man.

### INITIAL CHANGES PRODUCED BY THE ARTICLE.

#### Singular.

40. (a) If a noun begins with an aspirable consonant (except *b*, *c*, and *r*),\* it is aspirated by the article

---

\* The letters *b*, *c*, and *r* are aspirable in the singular, but not usually by the article



in the nominative and accusative feminine and in the genitive masculine, as *an bó*, the cow; *an bean*, the woman; *mac an fí*, (the) son of the man; *ceann an capáin*, the horse's head (or the head of the horse).

(b) If a noun begins with *r* followed by a vowel, or by *l*, *n*, *p*, the *r* is replaced by *τ*, in the nominative and accusative feminine and genitive masculine, and sometimes in the dative of both genders: *an trát*, the heel; *an trút*, the eye; *teac an trádair*, the house of the priest; *mac an tráoir*, the son of the artizan; *do'n trádair*, to the priest; *ar an trléib*, on the mountain.

Strictly speaking, it is only in the dat. fem. that the *r* is replaced by *τ*, but custom permits it in the masculine.

(c) If a noun begins with a vowel, the article prefixes *τ* to the nominative and accusative masculine, and *n* to the genitive feminine, as *an t-atair*, the father; *an t-uirge*, the water; *an t-eun*, the bird; *an t-uán*, the lamb; *báir na n-uíbe*, the top of the egg; *fuacht na n-aimríe*, the coldness of the weather

(d) When the noun begins with an eclipsable consonant (except *o* and *c*), the article generally eclipses when it is preceded by a preposition, as *ar an gcnoc*, on the hill; *ó'n bpeap*, from the man. After the prepositions\* *do* and *de* aspiration takes place, not

---

\* For the effects of *gan* and the article, see Syntax, par. 606 (b).

eclipsis, as *tug ré an t-airgead do'n fear*, he gave the money to the man ; *curo de'n fear*, some of the grass.

(e) No change is produced by the article in the singular if the noun begins with *o*, *n*, *t*, *l*, *r* (followed by a mute), or *p*. In *Munster* *o* and *t* are often eclipsed in the dative.

### Plural.

(f) If a noun begins with an eclipsable consonant the article eclipses it in the genitive plural, as *a bean na mbeirí* mbó, O woman of (the) three cows ; *Stiaob na mban*, "the mountain of the women."

(g) If the noun begins with a vowel the article prefixes *n* to the genitive plural and *n* to the nom., the acc., and dative plural, as *luac na n-ub*, the price of the eggs ; *na n-aspail*, the asses ; *ó na n-áitibí* reo, from these places.

(h) The letter *r* is never replaced by *t* in the plural number under the influence of the article.

## CHAPTER II.

### The Noun.

#### I. GENDER.

41. There are only two genders in Irish, the masculine and the feminine.

The gender of most Irish nouns may be learned by the application of a few general rules.

## MASCULINE NOUNS.

42. (a) Names of males are masculine: as *peap*, a man; *flait*, a prince; *atair*, a father; *coiteac*, a cock.

(b) The names of occupations, offices, &c., peculiar to men, are masculine: as *ollam*, a doctor; *file*, a poet; *bard*, a bard; *breiteam*, a judge; *raigtoir*, a soldier.

(c) Personal agents ending in *oir*, *aire*, *uir* (or *aire*, *oir*), or *ac* are masculine: as *rséuluir*, a story-teller; *báoir*, a boatman.

(d) Diminutives ending in *án*, and all abstract nouns ending in *ar* or *ear*, are masculine—*e.g.*:

*áiríán*, a hillock.                      *maitear*, goodness.

(e) The diminutives ending in *ín* are usually said to be of the same gender as the noun from which they are derived. Notwithstanding this rule they seem to be all masculine. *Catín*, a girl, is masculine,\* i. e. it suffers the same initial changes as a masculine noun, but the pronoun referring to it is feminine. She is a fine girl, *Is breá an catín í* (not *é*).

(f) Many nouns which end in a consonant or two consonants preceded by a broad vowel are masculine: as *ball*, a limb; *tuac*, a price; *craann*, a tree, &c.

*Exceptions*:—(1) All words of two or more syllables ending in *act* or *ós*.

---

\* Do not confound sex with gender. Gender is decided by grammatical usage only.

(2) A large number of nouns ending in a broad consonant are feminine. A very full list of commonly used feminine nouns ending in a broad consonant will be found in Appendix II.

### FEMININE NOUNS.

43. (a) Names of females and designations of females are feminine: bean, a woman; cearc, a hen; mátcár, a mother; ingean, a daughter.

(b) The names of countries and rivers are feminine: as Éire, Ireland; an Liffe, the Liffey; an Ūearṁḃa, the Barrow.

(c) Words of two or more syllables ending in áct or in óg are feminine: as fuireóg, a lark; ṽpúireóg, a briar; mitreáct, sweetness; tearṁnaáct, new-milk.

(d) All abstract nouns formed from the genitive singular feminine of adjectives are feminine: as áiríoe, height—from áirí, high; áitne, beauty—from áluinn, beautiful; ṽaílle, blindness—from ṽaíll, blind.

(e) Nouns ending in a consonant or two consonants preceded by a slender vowel, are feminine: as tír, country; onóir, honour; uair, an hour; ráit, an eye.

*Exceptions:*—(1) Personal nouns ending in óir. (2) Diminutives in ín. (3) Names of males, as átcár, a father; buácaíll, a boy. (4) Also the following nouns:—buairí, a victory; ṽpúim, the back; áinm,\* a name; greim, a piece; geit, a fright, a start; and roctóir, dictionary, vocabulary.

---

\* Áinm is feminine in S. Munster.

## II. CASE.

44. In Irish there are five cases—the Nominative, Accusative, Genitive, Dative, and Vocative.

The Nominative case in Irish corresponds to the English nominative when the subject of a verb.

The Accusative corresponds to the English objective case when governed by a transitive verb. The accusative case of every noun in modern Irish has the same form as the nominative, and suffers the same initial changes as regards aspiration and eclipsis.

The Genitive case corresponds to the English possessive case. English nouns in the possessive case or in the objective case, preceded by the preposition “of,” are usually translated into Irish by the genitive case.

The Dative case is the case governed by prepositions.

The Vocative corresponds to the English nominative of address. It is always used in addressing a person or persons. It is preceded by the sign  $\Delta$ , although “O” may not appear before the English word; but this  $\Delta$  is not usually pronounced before a vowel or  $f$ .

### RULES FOR THE FORMATION OF THE CASES.

N.B.—These rules apply to all the declensions.

45. The Nominative case singular is always the simple form of the noun.

46. The **Dative case singular** is the same as the nominative singular, except (1) in the 2nd declension, when the noun ends in a broad consonant; (2) in most of the nouns of the 5th declension.

47. The **Vocative case singular** is always the same as the nominative singular, except in the 1st declension, in which it is like the genitive singular.

48. Whenever the nominative plural is formed by the addition of *te*, *ta*, *anna*, *āḥa*, *i* or *iōe*, &c., it is called a **strong nominative plural**. Strong plurals are usually found with nouns whose nominative singular ends in a liquid.

Those ending in *t* or *n* generally take *ta* or *te*.

„	m or r	„	anna.
„	n	„	āḥa.

### The Genitive Plural.

49. (1) The genitive plural in the 1st, 2nd, and 3rd declensions is like the nominative singular, except strong plurals, and a few nouns which drop the *i* of the nominative singular, as *rūt*, an eye, gen. pl. *rūt*.

(2) In the 4th declension, and in the case of nearly all strong plurals, the genitive plural is like the nominative plural.

(3) In the 5th declension the genitive plural is like the genitive singular.



### 50. The Dative Plural.

(1) When the nominative plural ends in *а* or a consonant, the dative plural ends in *ѣ*.

(2) When the nominative plural ends in *е*, the dative plural is formed by changing the *е* into *ѣ*.

(3) When the nominative plural ends in *и*, the dative plural is formed by adding *ѣ*.

The termination of the dative plural is not always used in the spoken language.

### Vocative Plural.

51. (1) When the dative plural ends in *ѣ*, the vocative plural is formed by dropping the *ѣ* of the dative.

(2) In all other cases it is like the nominative plural.

## III. The Declensions.

52. The number of declensions is not quite settled: it is very much a matter of convenience. Five is the number usually reckoned.

The declensions are known by the inflection of the genitive singular.

### THE FIRST DECLENSION.

53. All the nouns of the first declension are masculine, and end in a broad consonant.

All masculine nouns ending in a broad consonant *are not* of the first declension.

54. The genitive singular is formed by attenuating the nominative. In most nouns of the 1st declension this is done by simply placing an *и* after the last broad vowel of the nominative.



**Example.**

55.                    *μαοῖρ*, a steward.

	SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
Nom. & Acc.	<i>μαοῖρ</i>	<i>μαοῖρ</i>
Gen.	<i>μαοῖρ</i>	<i>μαοῖρ</i>
Dat.	<i>μαοῖρ</i>	<i>μαοῖραις</i>
Voc.	<i>α μαοῖρ</i>	<i>α μαοῖρα</i>

56. In words of more than one syllable, if the nominative ends in *αε* or *εαε*, the genitive singular is formed by changing *αε* or *εαε* into *αις* or *ις* respectively. With a few exceptions, the nominative plural of these nouns is like the genitive singular. The other cases are quite regular.

In monosyllables *ε* is not changed into *ς*; as *βρυαε*, a brink, gen. *βρυαιε*.

N.B.—In all the declensions in words of more than one syllable *αε* and *εαε*, when attenuated, become *αις* and *ις*; and *αις* and *ις* when made broad become *αε* and *εαε*. See dat. pl. of *μαρκαε* and *κοιταε*.

**Examples.**

57.                    *μαρκαε*, a horseman.

	SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
Nom. & Acc.	<i>μαρκαε</i>	<i>μαρκαις</i>
Gen.	<i>μαρκαις</i>	<i>μαρκαε</i>
Dat.	<i>μαρκαε</i>	<i>μαρκαεαις</i>
Voc.	<i>α μαρκαις</i>	<i>α μαρκαεα</i>

N.B.—The majority of nouns in *αε* belonging to this declension are declined like *μαρκαε*.

## 58. ualac, a load, burden.

	SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
Nom. & Acc.	ualac	ualaiḡe
Gen.	ualaiḡ	ualac
Dat.	ualac	ualaiḡib
Voc.	Δ ualaiḡ	Δ ualaiḡe

mutlac, a summit; eutac, cloth; bealac, a path, a way; optac, an inch; and donac, a fair, are declined like ualac. donac has nom. pl. donaiḡe or dontaiḡe.

## 59. coiteac. a cock.

	SINGULAR	PLURAL.
Nom. & Acc.	coiteac	coitiḡ
Gen.	coitiḡ	coiteac
Dat.	coiteac	coiteacaiḡ
Voc.	Δ coitiḡ	Δ coiteaca

60. Besides the above simple method of forming the genitive singular of most nouns of this declension, there are also the following modifications of the vowels of the nominative singular:—

Change eu or éa in nom. sing. into éi in gen. sing.

„	ia	„	„	éi	„
„	o (short)	„	„	ui	„
io or ea		„ usually	„	i	„

All the other cases of these nouns are formed in accordance with the rules given above.

### Examples of Vowel-changes in Genitive Singular.

61. eun, a bird.

	SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
Nom. & Acc.	eun	éin
Gen.	éin	eun
Dat.	eun	eunaib
Voc.	Δ éin	Δ euna

62. fear, a man.

Nom. & Acc.	fear	fir
Gen.	fir	fear
Dat.	fear	fearaib
Voc.	Δ fear	Δ feara

N.B.—The gen. of oiteán in island is oiteáin; of fear, grass, fear; and of fear, a man, fir.

63. Cnoc, a hill.

	SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
Nom. & Acc.	cnoc	cnuic
Gen.	cnuic	cnoc
Dat.	cnoc	cnocaib
Voc.	Δ cnuic	Δ cnoca

64. The following nouns change ea into ei in genitive singular:—leant, a child; neart, strength; cneap, skin; and ceart, right, justice. (Cuir and cuir are sometimes found as the genitives of cneap and ceart).

### Irregular Genitive Singular.

mac, a son,	has	genitive mic
bíad, food,	„	bíó
ruan, a track,	„	ruain
rruan, a bridle,	„	rruain
Brían, Bernard, Brian	„	Brúain

neac, a person; and éinne, donne (or donneac), anybody, are indeclinable.

65. Some nouns of this declension form their nominative plural by adding e.

NOUN.	GENITIVE SING.	NOM. PLURAL.
donac, a fair	donais	{ donaisge donaisge
doir, a door	doir	doirge
éigear, a learned man	éigir	éigre
aingeal, an angel	aingil	aingle
bótar, a road	bótar	bóirge
maoirad or (maod), a dog	maoirad	maoirade
rlabrad, a chain	rlabrad	rlabraid
marstad, a market	marstad	marstaid

66 The following nouns take a in nominative plural:—peann, a pen; reot, a jewel; rlan, a surety; cnear, skin; meacan, a carrot or parsnip; tear, a tear; caor, a berry; rmeur, a blackberry; uball, an apple (pl ubla); focat (pl. focait or focla); fiac,\* a debt (fiac, pl. féic or féig, a raven); rgeut, news; and brua, a brink.

67. The following take ta, in nom. pl.:—reot, a sail; ceot, music; neut, a cloud; rgeut, a story; cogad,

\* This word is usually used in the plural; as ní fuil don fiaca orm, I am not in debt.

war (pl. κοῦτα\*); cuan, a harbour; οὔν, a fort (pl. οὔντα and οὔνα); cento, a hundred†; ὕον, a net; ceap a trunk of a tree (pl. ceapτα); μῦρ (pl. μῦρτα), a wall.

68. Other nominative plurals—κλᾶρ, a board, a table, makes κλᾶρ or κλᾶρα; τοβάρ, a well, makes τοβάρ or τοβαρα, τοβαίρεα or τοίβεα: ρυαξ, a crowd, makes ρυαίστε.

69. Many nouns of this declension have two or more forms in the nominative plural. The regular plural is the better one, though the others are also used. The following are a few examples of such nouns:—ῥεαρ, a man (pl. ῥίρ, ῥεαρα); mac, a son (pl. mic, maca); λεῦδάρ, a book (λεῦδαίρ, λεῦδρα); ἀρμ, an army (pl. ἀρμ, ἀρμα); capall, a horse (pl. capall, caple).

70. The termination -ραὸ has a collective, not a plural force; just like *ry* in the English words *cavalry*, *infantry*, etc. This termination was formerly *neuter*, but now it is masculine or feminine; the genitive masculine being -ραὸ, the genitive feminine -ραιὸε. Hence λαοῦραὸ, *a band of warriors*, μακαραὸ, *a company of youths*, εαῶραὸ, *a number of steeds (cavalry)*, are not really plurals of λαοῦ, μακ, and εαῶ, but collective nouns formed from them. Likewise ἐανταίτ, (spoken form, ἐανταίτε) is a collective noun meaning *a flock of birds*, or *birds in general*, and it is not really the plural of ἐαν. However, λαοῦραὸ and ἐανταίτ are now used as plurals.

Appendix I. gives a list of nouns belonging to this declension.

\* κοῦαίρε is also used.

† When used as a noun.

## THE SECOND DECLENSION.

71. All nouns of the 2nd declension are feminine.\* They all end in consonants, but the consonants may be either broad or slender.

72. The **genitive singular** is formed by adding *e*, (if the last vowel of the nominative be broad it must be attenuated); and if the last consonant be *c* it is changed into *ç* in the genitive (except in words of one syllable).

73. The **dative singular** is got by dropping the final *e* of the genitive.

74. The **nominative plural** is formed by adding *Δ* or *e* (*Δ*, if final consonant be broad) to the nom. sing.

## Examples.

75.                      *lil*, a lily.

	SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
Nom. & Acc.	<i>lil</i>	<i>lile</i>
Gen.	<i>lile</i>	<i>lil</i>
Dat.	<i>lil</i>	<i>lililb</i>
Voc.	<i>Δ lil</i>	<i>Δ lile</i>

76.                      *cor*, a foot† or a leg.

Nom. & Acc.	<i>cor</i>	<i>corΔ</i>
Gen.	<i>coire</i>	<i>cor</i>
Dat.	<i>cor</i>	<i>corΔilb</i>
Voc.	<i>Δ cor</i>	<i>Δ corΔ</i>

\* *τεαc* and *ρεilab*, two masculine nouns, are sometimes given with the second declension. We give them as irregular nouns (par. 132).

† A foot in measurement is *τηοικz*, pl. *τηοικçte*.

## 77.                   cailleac, a hag.

	SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
Nom. & Acc.	cailleac	cailleaca
Gen.	caillege	cailleac
Dat.	cailleig	cailleacuib
Voc.	a cailleac	a cailleaca

78. Like nouns of 1st declension, the vowels of the nom. sing. are sometimes changed when the final consonant is attenuated in the genitive singular.

The following are the chief changes :—

Change *io* in the nom. sing. into *i* in the gen. sing

„	eu	„	„	éi	„
„	ia	„	„	éi	„
„	o (short) sometimes	„	„	ui	„

In words of one syllable change *ea* into *eí* (but *cearc*, a hen, becomes *círcce*); in words of more than one syllable change *ea* into *i*.

## 79.                   bèac, a bee.

	SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
Nom. & Acc.	bèac	bèaca
Gen.	bèice	bèac
Dat.	bèic	bèacuib
Voc.	a bèac	a bèaca

## 80.                   geus, a branch.

Nom. & Acc.	geus	geusa
Gen.	geise	geus
Dat.	geis	geusuib
Voc.	a geus	a geusa



81.                      **ḡrian, a sun.**

	SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
Nom. & Acc.	ḡrian	ḡriana, ḡrianta
Gen.	ḡréine	ḡrian
Dat.	ḡréin	ḡrianaib
Voc.	Δ ḡrian	Δ ḡriana

82.                      **long, a ship.**

Nom. & Acc.	long	longa
Gen.	luinge	long
Dat.	luing	longaib
Voc.	Δ long	Δ longa

83.                      **ḡreum,\* a root.**

	SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
Nom. & Acc.	ḡreum	ḡreuma (or ḡreumača)
Gen.	ḡréime	ḡreum (ḡreumača)
Dat.	ḡréim	ḡreumaib (ḡreumačaib)
Voc.	Δ ḡreum	Δ ḡreuma (Δ ḡreumača)

84.                      **áit, a place.**

	SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
Nom. & Acc.	áit	áite, áiteanna or áiteača
Gen.	áite	áit, áiteanna, „ áiteača
Dat.	áit	áitib, áiteannaib, áiteačaib
Voc.	Δ áit	Δ áite, áiteanna, áiteača

The above are two examples of nouns with strong nominative plural (see par. 48).

85. In forming the genitive, nouns are sometimes

---

\*Also spelled ḡreum in Munster.

syncopated, as *buiréan*, a company, gen. *buiríne* (see pars. 33, 35); *bhuiréan*, a palace, gen. sing. *bhuiríne*.\*

### 86. Irregular Genitives Singular.

<i>clann</i> , a clan, children, makes	{ <i>clainne</i> , pl. <i>clanna</i> <i>clainne</i> ,
<i>veoc</i> , a drink,	„ <i>oige</i> , „ <i>veoca</i>
<i>ṛṣian</i> , a knife,	„ <i>ṛṣine</i> , „ <i>ṛṣeana</i>
<i>briathar</i> , a (solemn) word,	„ <i>briéiríe</i> , „ <i>briathra</i>
<i>blátcá</i> , buttermilk,	„ <i>bláitcé†</i>
<i>laṭac</i> , mud, mire,	„ <i>laítcé†</i>
<i>ṭadḃac</i> , a vat,	„ <i>ṭaibḃe</i> „ <i>ṭadḃaca</i>
<i>aḡairḃ</i> , a face,	„ <i>aigḃe</i> „ <i>aigḃe</i>

87. Many nouns of this declension form their nominative plural in *anna* or *aca*. The final *a* of these terminations *may* be dropped in the genitive plural.

NOM. SING.	NOM. PL.
<i>cúir</i> , a cause	<i>cúireanna</i>
<i>luib</i> , an herb	<i>luibeanna</i>
<i>veit</i> , a lathe	<i>veiteanna</i>
<i>ḡluair</i> , a contrivance	<i>ḡluaireanna</i>
<i>béim</i> , a stroke	<i>béimeanna</i>
<i>ṭuair</i> , a prize, reward	<i>ṭuaireanna</i>
<i>léim</i> , a leap	<i>léimeanna</i>
<i>ṛéim</i> , a course, a voyage	<i>ṛéimeanna</i>
<i>áit</i> , a place	<i>áite</i> , <i>áiteanna</i> , <i>áiteaca</i>
<i>luḃ</i> , a mouse	<i>luḃa</i> , <i>luḃanna</i> [ <i>ṭeaca</i>
<i>ṛḡoil</i> , a school	<i>ṛḡoileanna</i> ( <i>ṛḡoilta</i> ), <i>ṛḡoil-</i>

\* Note the dative singular of these nouns, *buiríin* and *bhuiríin*.

†Also *blátaigḃe*.

†Also *laṭaigḃe*.

## NOM. SING.

céim, a step  
 fuaim, a sound  
 uair, an hour, time  
 rráid, a street  
 páirc, a field  
 feir, a festival

## NOM. PL.

céimeanna  
 fuaimanna  
 uaire, uaireanna, uaireanta  
 rráide, rráideanna, rráideacha  
 páirce, páirceanna  
 feireanna

88. Nouns that take *acha* in nominative plural—

obair, a work	oibreacha
óráid, an oration	óráideacha
rlat, a rod	rlata, rlatacha
litir, a letter	litre, litreacha
uib, an egg	uibhe, uibheacha
paidir, a prayer	paidreacha
aicid, a disease	aicideacha, aicidí
ciúinair, an edge	ciúinaireacha
coictríoir, a fortnight	coictríoireacha, coictríoirí
truaill, a sheathe, a scabbard	truaillreacha
leac, a flag, a flat stone	leaca, leacacha, leacraoib

89. The following take *ce, ce, or ca* in the nominative plural; *ach* may be added in the genitive plural:—*coill*\*, a wood; *túr*, a pillar, a prop; *tír*, a country (pl. *tíortha*); *aḡair*, face (pl. *aḡce*); *rpeur*, a sky; *rpeurtha*.

90. Sometimes when the last vowel of the nominative singular is *i* preceded by a broad vowel, the

---

\* *Coill* is also 5th declension. See Heteroclite nouns, par. 131.

genitive plural is formed by dropping the *i*, as *ῥῖτ*, an eye, gen. pl. *ῥῖτ*; *ῥῡαῖν*, a sound, gen. pl. *ῥῡαῖν*, &c.

For a list of nouns ending in a broad consonant belonging to this declension, see Appendix II.

### THIRD DECLENSION.

91. The 3rd declension includes (1) personal nouns ending in *οῖν* (all masculine), (2) derived nouns in *ἄτ* or *αῶ* (feminine), (3) other nouns ending in consonants which are, as a rule, masculine or feminine according as they end in broad or slender consonants.

92. The genitive singular is formed by adding *α*. If the last vowel of the nominative be *i* preceded by a broad vowel, the *i* is usually dropped in the gen., as *τοῖτ*, a will, gen. *τοῖα*.

93. The nominative plural is usually the same as the genitive singular; but personal nouns ending in *οῖν* add *i* or *ῖοε* to the nominative singular.

94. Most of the derived nouns in *ἄτ*, being abstract in meaning, do not admit of a plural. *μαῖαἄτ*, a curse, and a few others have plurals. *ῥῡαἄτ*, cold, although an abstract noun in *ἄτ*, is masculine.

95. The vowels of the nominative often undergo a change in the formation of the genitive singular. These changes are just the reverse of the vowel changes of the 1st and 2nd declensions (see pars. 60 and 78).

Change ei, i or io (short) in nom. into eΔ in the genitive

„	u	„ ui	„	o	„
„	éi		„	éΔ	„

### Examples.

96. cnám,\* a bone.

	SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
Nom. & Acc.	cnám	cnámΔ
Gen.	cnámΔ	cnám
Dat.	cnám	cnámΔið
Voc.	Δ cnám	Δ cnámΔ

97. fíon, wine.

Nom. & Acc.	fíon	fíonΔ, fíonτΔ
Gen.	fíonΔ	fíon
Dat.	fíon	fíonΔið
Voc.	Δ fíon	Δ fíonΔ

98. cμor, a belt, a girdle.

Nom. & Acc.	cμor	cμeapΔ
Gen.	cμeapΔ	cμor
Dat.	cμor	cμeapΔið
Voc.	Δ cμor	Δ cμeapΔ

99. feoit, flesh, meat.

Nom. & Acc.	feoit	feotΔ
Gen.	feotΔ	feoit
Dat.	feoit	feotΔið
Voc.	Δ feoit	Δ feotΔ

---

\*Also spelled cnám in nom. sing.

## 100.           βάτορ, a boatman.

	SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
Nom. & Acc.	βάτορ	βάτορί (βάτοριμε)
Gen.	βάτορα	βάτορ, βάτορί
Dat.	βάτορι	βάτορις (βάτορις)
Voc.	α βάτορ	α βάτορί (α βάτοριμε)

## 101.           ορμ, masc., the back.

Nom. & Acc.	ορμ	ορμanna
Gen.	ορμα	ορμanna
Dat.	ορμι	ορμannaς
Voc.	α ορμ	α ορμanna

## 102.           ζρεμ, masc., a morsel, grip.

Nom. & Acc.	ζρεμ	ζρεμanna
Gen.	ζρεμα	ζρεμanna
Dat.	ζρεμι	ζρεμannaς
Voc.	α ζρεμ	α ζρεμanna

103. Some nouns of this declension, ending in *ι* or *η*, form their nominative pl. by adding *τα* or *τε* to the nom. sing. These may add *α* to form gen. pl., as—

μόν,* a bog,	nom. pl.	μόντε
τάη, a drove,	„	τάητε
βλιαόη, a year,	„	βλιαόητα†

\* *μόν* is also 5th declension. See Heteroclite Nouns, par. 131.

† *βλιαόη* after numerals, as *οὐτ μβλιαόη*, eight years.

**104.** Some nouns of this declension form their nom. plural by adding *nna* to the gen. singular. These may drop the final *a* in the gen. plural:—

NOM. PLURAL.

am, time	amann̄ta	OR	amanna
rput, a stream	rput̄a	„	rput̄anna
opum, m., a back			opomanna
gut, a voice	gut̄a	„	gut̄anna
greim, m., a morsel			greamanna
cit̄, or ciot̄, a shower	ceat̄a	„	ceat̄anna
cleap, a trick	cleap̄a	„	cleap̄anna
anam, a soul	anna	„	annanna
dat̄, a colour	dat̄a	„	dat̄anna
ainm, a name	ainmne, ainmneac̄a,		ainmanna
maib̄m, a defeat	maib̄ma, maib̄manna		

**105. Other Nominatives Plural.**

gníom̄, a deed, an act makes gníom̄ap̄t̄a\*

conn̄p̄aib̄, a compact,

covenant	„	conn̄ap̄t̄a
cáin†, a tax	„	cánaac̄a
buaic̄aill, a boy	„	buaic̄aillí
cliaim̄ain, a son-in-law	„	cliaim̄naac̄a
teabaib̄, † f., a bed	„	teab̄t̄a, teap̄t̄ac̄a, teap̄t̄a
curo, a share, a portion	„	cot̄c̄a, cot̄ana

For a list of nouns belonging to this declension, see Appendix III.

\* Really pl. of gníom̄p̄aib̄. † Cáin is also 5th declension.

‡ Also spelled teabaib̄.



## THE FOURTH DECLENSION.

**106.** The 4th declension includes (1) personal nouns in  $\alpha\iota\tau\epsilon$ ,  $\alpha\iota\omicron\epsilon$ ,  $\omega\iota\omicron\epsilon$ ,  $\alpha\iota\zeta\epsilon$  (sometimes spelled  $\alpha\iota\omicron$ ,  $\omega\iota\omicron$ ,  $\alpha\iota\zeta$ ), which are all masculine; (2) diminutives in  $\iota\eta$  (said to be all masculine); (3) abstract derivatives formed from the gen. sing. feminine of adjectives (all feminine), as  $\zeta\iota\tau\epsilon$ , brightness, from  $\zeta\epsilon\alpha\iota$ ;  $\pi\acute{\epsilon}\iota\tau\epsilon$ , generosity, from  $\pi\iota\alpha\iota$ ;  $\acute{\alpha}\iota\tau\eta\epsilon$ , beauty, from  $\acute{\alpha}\iota\upsilon\mu\eta\eta$ , &c.; (4) all nouns ending in vowels, and which do not belong to the 5th declension. To assist the student a list of the most important nouns of the 5th declension is given in the Appendix IV.

**107.** This declension differs from all others in having all the cases of the singular exactly alike.

**108.** The nominative plural is usually formed by adding  $\iota$ ,  $\iota\omicron\epsilon$  or  $\alpha\omicron\alpha$ .

**109.** The genitive plural is like the nom. pl., but  $\epsilon\alpha\omicron$  is frequently added in other grammars. There is no necessity whatever for this, because both cases are pronounced alike.

**110.** Nouns of more than one syllable ending in  $\alpha$  form their nom. plural in  $\alpha\iota\omicron\epsilon$ , or  $\alpha\iota$ , as  $\mu\acute{\alpha}\tau\alpha$ , a bag, pl.  $\mu\acute{\alpha}\tau\alpha\iota\omicron\epsilon$ , or  $\mu\acute{\alpha}\tau\alpha\iota$ ;  $\kappa\acute{o}\tau\alpha$ , a coat, pl.  $\kappa\acute{o}\tau\alpha\iota\omicron\epsilon$ , or  $\kappa\acute{o}\tau\alpha\iota$ .

## 111. cailín, masc., a girl.

	SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
Nom. & Acc.	cailín	cailíní or (cailíníðe)
Gen.	cailín	cailíní (cailín) „ (cailíníðe)
Dat.	cailín	cailíníð „ (cailíníðíð)
Voc.	a cailín	a cailíní „ (a cailíníðe)

## 112. tigearna a lord.

	SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
Nom. & Acc.	tigearna	tigearnaí(-aíðe)
Gen.	tigearna	tigearnaí(-aíðe)
Dat.	tigearna	tigearnaíð(-aíðíð)
Voc.	a tigearna	a tigearnaí(-aíðe)

113. The following nouns take *te* immediately after the last consonant to form the nominative plural:—

bailte, a town	plural	bailte or bailteada
rlóinne, a surname	„	rlóinnite
múille, a mule	„	múillite
míle, a thousand, a mile	„	mílte*
léine, a shirt	„	léinite, léinteada
teine,† a fire	„	teinite, teinteada
cúinne, a corner	„	cúinnite cúinní

114. The following nouns add *te* in nominative plural, viz., all nouns ending in *íðe* or *íge*—e.g. *croíðe*, a heart, pl. *croíðite*; also *caoi*, a way, a method; *ṽaoi*, a fool; *ṽaoi*, a wise man; *ṽaoi*, a druid; *ṽaoi*, a curl.

\* *míle*, a thousand, or a mile, is invariable after a numeral.

† *teine* is also 5th. See Heteroclite nouns, par. 131.

ḡnó, a work (pl. ḡnóḡḡ),\* níḡ, or ní, a thing (pl. neíte); ḡuine, a person, makes ḡaoine in nom. pl.

uinge, an ounce,	„	uingeḡḡ	„
eḡrna, a rib,	„	eḡrnaḡḡ	„

115. A few proper nouns, although not ending in a vowel or in, belong to this declension, and do not change their form in any of their cases, viz.:—  
ḡáḡḡḡḡḡ, Patrick; ḡeḡḡḡḡḡ, Gerald; Muḡḡḡ, Maurice;  
Caḡḡḡḡ, Cahir.

The word tuḡḡ, a people, does not change in gen.

## THE FIFTH DECLENSION.

116. Most of the nouns belonging to this declension end in a vowel, and are, with a few exceptions, feminine.

117. The genitive singular is formed by adding a *broad consonant*.

This consonant varies in different nouns, but is usually n, nn, sometimes ḡ, ḡḡ, or ḡ. When the nominative singular ends in a consonant, ḡ or eḡ comes between that consonant and the consonant added.

118. The dative singular is formed by attenuating the genitive. In the case of those nouns which form the genitive by adding ḡ, the dative singular is usually like the nominative.

---

\*ḡnóḡḡḡḡ is spoken in Kerry.

119. The nominative plural, as a general rule, is formed by adding  $\alpha$  to the genitive singular. A few form their nominative plural by adding  $e$  to the gen. sing. This is accompanied with syncope, as in  $\epsilon\alpha\iota\phi\omicron\epsilon$ , friends;  $\eta\alpha\iota\mu\omicron\epsilon$ , enemies;  $\zeta\alpha\iota\upsilon\eta\epsilon$ , smiths; and  $\alpha\iota\upsilon\eta\epsilon$ , rivers, which are the plurals of  $\epsilon\alpha\phi\alpha$ ,  $\eta\alpha\mu\alpha$ ,  $\zeta\alpha\upsilon\alpha$ , and  $\alpha\upsilon$ , or  $\alpha\upsilon\alpha$ .

Some others form the nominative plural by attenuating the genitive singular, as in  $\tau\alpha\epsilon\alpha\iota\eta$ , ducks;  $\epsilon\omicron\iota\eta$ , hounds;  $\tau\iota\epsilon\iota\omicron$ , twenty;  $\epsilon\alpha\omicron\iota\phi\iota\zeta$ , sheep;  $\epsilon\omicron\mu\upsilon\phi\tau\eta\iota\eta$ , neighbours.

The genitive plural is exactly like the genitive singular.

### Examples.

	SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
120.	$\epsilon\epsilon\alpha\phi\alpha$ , fem., a person.	
Nom. & Acc.	$\epsilon\epsilon\alpha\phi\alpha$	$\epsilon\epsilon\alpha\phi\alpha\eta\alpha$
Gen.	$\epsilon\epsilon\alpha\phi\alpha\eta$	$\epsilon\epsilon\alpha\phi\alpha\eta$
Dat.	$\epsilon\epsilon\alpha\phi\alpha\iota\eta$	$\epsilon\epsilon\alpha\phi\alpha\eta\alpha\iota\upsilon$
Voc.	$\alpha\ \epsilon\epsilon\alpha\phi\alpha$	$\alpha\ \epsilon\epsilon\alpha\phi\alpha\eta\alpha$

121.	$\epsilon\alpha\phi\alpha$ , fem., a friend.	
Nom. & Acc.	$\epsilon\alpha\phi\alpha$	$\epsilon\alpha\iota\phi\omicron\epsilon$
Gen.	$\epsilon\alpha\phi\alpha\upsilon$	$\epsilon\alpha\phi\alpha\upsilon$
Dat.	$\epsilon\alpha\phi\alpha\iota\upsilon$	$\epsilon\alpha\iota\phi\omicron\iota\upsilon$
Voc.	$\alpha\ \epsilon\alpha\phi\alpha$	$\alpha\ \epsilon\alpha\iota\phi\omicron\epsilon$

	SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
122.	ḡaba, masc., a smith.	
Nom. & Acc.	ḡaba	ḡaibne
Gen.	ḡabann	ḡabann
Dat.	ḡabainn	ḡaibnið
Voc.	a ḡaba	a ḡaibne
123.	laća, fem., a duck.	
Nom. & Acc.	laća	laćain
Gen.	laćan	laćan
Dat.	laćain	laćanaib
Voc.	a laća	a laćana
124.	cuirte, fem., a vein.	
Nom. & Acc.	cuirte	cuirteanna
Gen.	cuirteann	cuirteann
Dat.	cuirtinn	cuirteannaib
Voc.	a cuirte	a cuirteanna
125.	caora, fem., a sheep.	
Nom. & Acc.	caora	caoiriḡ
Gen.	caorać	caorać
Dat.	caoraiḡ	caorćaib, caoraćaib
Voc.	a caora	a caorća or a caoraća
126.	caćaoir, fem., a chair.	
Nom. & Acc.	caćaoir	caćaoireaća
Gen.	caćaoireać	caćaoireać
Dat.	caćaoir	caćaoireaćaib
Voc.	a caćaoir	a caćaoireaća

## SINGULAR (no Plural).

127.      Nom. & Acc.    Éire (Ireland)  
                  Gen.        Éireann  
                  Dat.        Éirinn  
                  Voc.        a Éire
128.      Nom. & Acc.    Teorann (Tara)  
                  Gen.        Teorannac  
                  Dat.        Teorannais or Teorannair  
                  Voc.        a Teorannair
129.      Nom. & Acc.    Alba (Scotland)  
                  Gen.        Alban  
                  Dat.        Albain  
                  Voc.        a Alba

130. The following nouns are used only in the plural, referring originally rather to the *inhabitants* of the place than to the place itself:—

## SACRANA, England.

Nom. & Acc.	SACRANA or SACRAIN
Gen.	SACRAN
Dat.	SACRANAIB

	LAIGIN, Leinster.	CONNAECTA, Connaught.	ULAIRB, Ulster
Nom. & Acc.	LAIGIN	CONNAECTA	ULAIRB
Gen.	LAIGEAN	CONNAECT	ULAB
Dat.	LAIGINIB	CONNAECTAIB	ULTAIB

A large list of the commonly used nouns, which belong to this declension, are given in Appendix IV.



### Heteroclite Nouns.

131. Heteroclite nouns are those which belong to more than one declension. The following are the chief nouns of this class, We give only the genitive case in the singular, as the other cases present no difficulty. The irregular nominative plurals only are given :—

NOUN.	DECLENSIONS.	GEN. SING.	NOM. PL.
briatair, a word	1 & 2	{ briatair briéirne	
ríat, a shield	1 & 2	{ ríéir ríéirne	
teine, a fire	4 & 5	{ teine teineas	teinte
beata, life	4 & 5	{ beata beatas	
riúge, a way	4 & 5	{ riúge riúgeas	riúgte
coill, a wood	2 & 5	{ coille coilleas	coillte
móin, a bog	3 & 5	{ móna mónas	móinte
talam, m., land	1 & 5	{ talamh, m. talman, f.	
eorua, barley	4 & 5	{ eorua eoruan	
breiteamh, a judge	1 & 5	{ breiteamh breiteamhan	{ breiteamhain breiteamha

NOUN.	DECLENSIONS.	GEN. SING.	NOM. PL.
φειδεαῖν, a debtor	1 & 5	{ φειδεῖν φειδεαῖναν	{ φειδεαῖναι φειδεαῖνα
ῥῖν, f., a nose	2 & 3	{ ῥῖνε ῥῖνα	
κουά, a cuckoo	1 & 2	{ κουαί, m. κουαίε, f.	κουαί κουάα
κόμῃα, a coffer, coffin	4 & 5	{ κόμῃα κόμῃαν	κόμῃανα
κάμ, a tax	3 & 5	{ κάνα κάναε	κάνα κάναα
κορῶν, a crown	2 & 5	{ κορῶνε κορῶναε κορῶναε	κορῶναα

All abstract nouns ending in εαῖ or αῖ may belong either to the 1st or 3rd declension; as, αἰσθεαῖ, pleasure, gen. αἰσθηῖ or αἰσθεαῖ. Being abstract nouns they are seldom used in the plural.

### Irregular Nouns.

	SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
132.	τεαέ, masc., a house.	
Nom. & Acc.	τεαέ, τῖς	τῖςτε
Gen.	τῖςε*	τῖςτε(αὐ), τεαέ
Dat.	τεαέ, τῖς	τῖςτιβ
Voc.	α τεαέ, τῖς	α τῖςτε

---

\* It has also the forms τοῖς in gen. and τοῖς in dative.

	SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
	րևած, masc., a mountain.	
Nom. & Acc.	րևած	րևեօ՛ւք
Gen.	րևեօ՛ւ	րևեօ՛ւք
Dat.	րևեօ՛ւ, րևած	րևեօ՛ւցիւ
Voc.	ձ րևած	ձ րևեօ՛ւք

	աժար, masc., a father.	
Nom. & Acc.	աժար	աի՛րք or աի՛րքաճ
Gen.	աժար	աի՛րքաճ ,, աի՛րքաճ
Dat.	աժար	աի՛րքաճաւ
Voc.	ձ աժար	ձ աի՛րք or ձ աի՛րքաճ

	ճարճիւր, f., a sister (by blood).	
Nom. & Acc.	ճարճիւր	ճարճիւրաճ
Gen.	ճարճաժար	ճարճիւրաճ
Dat.	ճարճար	ճարճիւրաճաւ

In these words the ծր is pronounced like ք.

The words մաժար, *a mother*; Երաժար, *a brother (in religion)*; and ԵարԵրաժար, *a brother (by blood)*, are declined like աժար. The genitive of րիւր, *a sister (in religion)*, is րաժար (or րիւրա).

	SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
	րի, masc., a king.	
Nom. & Acc.	րի	րիճե, րիօճ, րիօճ
Gen.	րիօճ	րիճե, րիօճ
Dat.	րիճ	րիճիւ
Voc.	ձ րի	ձ րաճե

## SINGULAR. PLURAL.

bean, fem., a woman.

Nom. & Acc.	bean	mná
Gen.	mná	ban
Dat.	mnaoi	mnáiḃ
Voc.	Δ bean	Δ mná

bó, fem., a cow.

Nom. & Acc.	bó	ba
Gen.	bó	bó
Dat.	buin	buaiḃ
Voc.	Δ bó	Δ ba

Ḑia, masc., God.

Nom. & Acc.	Ḑia	Ḑée, Ḑéite
Gen.	Ḑé	Ḑia, Ḑéiteaḁ
Dat.	Ḑia	Ḑéitiḃ
Voc.	Δ Ḑé, Δ Ḑia	Δ Ḑée

lá, masc., a day.

## SINGULAR. PLURAL.

Nom. & Acc.	lá	laete, laeteanta*
Gen.	lae	laeteaḁ, laeteanta, lá
Dat.	ló, lá	laetiḃ, laeteantaḃ
Voc.	Δ lá	Δ laete, Δ laeteanta

cré, fem., soil, earth.

Nom. & Acc.	cré	créróeana
Gen.	criaḁ, créróeaḁ	criaḁ
Dat.	créró, cré	créróeanaḃ
Voc.	Δ cré	Δ créróeana

\* lá is generally used after numerals.

## SINGULAR.

## PLURAL.

mí, fem., a month.

Nom. & Acc.	mí	míora†
Gen.	míora	míor
Dat.	mír, mí	míoraib

ceó, masc., a fog.

Nom. & Acc.	ceó	ceóðana, ceóca
Gen.	cíac ceoiḡ	ceó
Dat.	ceó	ceócaib

ḡa, masc., a spear, javelin, sunbeam.

Nom. & Acc.	ḡa	ḡaete, ḡaol, ḡaite
Gen.	ḡa, ḡae, ḡaol	ḡaite(āb), ḡat
Dat.	ḡa	ḡaetib, ḡaotib

ó or ua, masc., a grandson.

Nom. & Acc.	ó, ua	uí
Gen.	í, uí	ua
Dat.	ó, ua	ib. uib
Voc.	a uí	a uí

ḡé, masc., a goose

Nom. & Acc.	ḡé or ḡeāb	ḡéanna, ḡeāba, ḡeíbe
Gen.	ḡé „ ḡeíb, ḡeoirb	ḡéanna, ḡeāb
Dat.	ḡé „ ḡeāb	ḡéannaib, ḡeābaib
Voc.	a ḡé „ a ḡeāb	a ḡéanna, a ḡeāba

friuḡ, fem., a fleshworm.

Nom. & Acc.	friuḡ	friuḡeacá
Gen.	friuḡe	friuḡeac(a)
Dat.	friuḡio	friuḡeacáib

† mí after numerals as oēt mí, 8 months: míonna is spoken in Kerry as plural of mí.

## CHAPTER III.

**The Adjective.****I. DECLENSION OF ADJECTIVES.**

**133.** In Irish the adjective agrees with the noun which it qualifies in gender, number, and case.

**There are four declensions of adjectives.** Adjectives are declined very much like nouns; the great difference is that they never\* take the termination *ib* in the dative plural (though formerly they did). The dative plural is invariably like the nominative plural.

Adjectives, in forming their genitive singular, undergo the same VOWEL-CHANGES as nouns, as—

*gorm*, blue, gen. masc. *gairm*

*geat*, bright, „ *geit*, &c.

**FIRST DECLENSION.**

**134.** All adjectives ending in a broad consonant, as *mór*, *bán*, *fionn*, &c., belong to the 1st declension.

**135.** When an adjective of the 1st declension agrees with a masculine noun, it is declined like a noun of the 1st declension (see *maor*, &c., pars. 55, 57), except that the nom., acc., dat., and voc. plural are always alike, and are formed by adding *a* to the nominative singular.

---

\*When used as nouns they take the termination.

136. When an adjective of the 1st declension agrees with a feminine noun, it is declined like a noun of the 2nd declension (see cor, par. 67, &c.), but it never takes ιβ in the dative plural.

Adjectives ending in αε form their plural by adding α, both for masculine and feminine.

### Examples.

137.	μόρι, big.		
	SINGULAR.		PLURAL.
	Masc.	Fem.	Masc. & Fem.
Nom. & Acc.	μόρι	μόρι	μόρια
Gen.	μόρι	μόρις	μόρι
Dat.	μόρι	μόρι	ιόρια
Voc.	μόρι	μόρι	μόρια

138.	ζεαλ, bright.		
Nom. & Acc.	ζεαλ	ζεαλ	ζεαλα
Gen.	ζιλ	ζιτε	ζεαλ
Dat.	ζεαλ	ζιλ	ζεαλα
Voc.	ζιλ	ζεαλ	ζεαλα

139.	οίρεαε, straight, direct.		
Nom. & Acc.	οίρεαε	οίρεαε	οίρεαεα
Gen.	οίρις	οίρις	οίρεαε
Dat.	οίρεαε	οίρις	οίρεαεα
Voc.	οίρις	οίρεαε	οίρεαεα

140. The following list of adjectives gives examples of the vowel-changes mentioned above. The genitive



masculine is given; the genitive feminine is formed by adding e:—

NOM.	GEN.		NOM.	GEN.	
lom	luim	bare	reapb	reipb	bitter
gorim	guirim	blue	reang	reing	slender
borb	buirb	rough	geup	géip	sharp
cpom	cpuim	bent	oipeac	oípuig	straight
donn	duinn	brown	uaigneac	uaignig	lonely
bog	buig	soft	Albanaic	Albanag	Scotch
boct	boict	poor	finn	finn	fair
cpom	cpuim	heavy	fiac	féil	generous
meap	mip	active	fluic	fluc	wet
ceapc	cipt (ceipt)	right	beag	bis	small
deap	deip	pretty	cpion	cpin	withered
deang	deing	red	teann	teinn	stern

141. There are five or six adjectives of the first declension which are syncopated in the genitive singular feminine and in the plural:—

NOMINATIVE.	GEN. SING.		PLURAL.
	Masc.	Fem.	Both Genders.
uapal, noble	uapail	uairle	uairle
oiteap, beloved, dear	oilir	oilre	oilre
reamap, fat	reamair	reimre	reamra
fiol, low	fiul	irle	irle
geapp, short	gip*	giopra (irreg.)	geappra

\* geappra is sometimes used in the spoken language.

## SECOND DECLENSION.

142. All adjectives ending in a slender consonant, except those in  $\Delta\mu\Delta\iota\tau$ , belong to the second declension.

In the singular all the cases, both masculine and feminine, are alike, *except the genitive feminine* which is formed by adding  $e$ .

In the plural both genders are alike. All the cases, with the exception of the genitive, are alike, and are formed by adding  $e$  to the nominative singular.

The genitive plural is the same as the nominative singular.

## Example.

	SINGULAR.		PLURAL.
	Masculine.	Feminine.	Both Genders.
Nom. & Acc.	$\mu\Delta\iota\tau$	$\mu\Delta\iota\tau$	$\mu\Delta\iota\tau e$
Gen.	$\mu\Delta\iota\tau$	$\mu\Delta\iota\tau e$	$\mu\Delta\iota\tau$
Dat.	$\mu\Delta\iota\tau$	$\mu\Delta\iota\tau$	$\mu\Delta\iota\tau e$
Voc.	$\mu\Delta\iota\tau$	$\mu\Delta\iota\tau$	$\mu\Delta\iota\tau e$

144. Notice the following examples of syncope in the genitive feminine and in the plural:—

$\Delta\sigma\iota\upsilon\theta\iota\mu\eta$ , gen. sing. fem. and pl.	$\Delta\sigma\iota\upsilon\theta\eta$ , pleasant
$\Delta\lambda\iota\upsilon\mu\eta$ , „ „	$\Delta\iota\tau\eta$ ( $\Delta\iota\tau\eta$ ), beautiful
$\mu\iota\lambda\iota\tau$ , „ „	$\mu\iota\lambda\tau\eta$ , sweet

145. The following adjectives are irregular:—

$\epsilon\omicron\iota\tau$ , gen. sing. fem. and plural	$\epsilon\omicron\tau\alpha$ , right, just
$\tau\epsilon\Delta\epsilon\alpha\iota\tau$ , „ „	$\tau\epsilon\Delta\epsilon\tau\alpha$ , difficult
$\tau\omicron\epsilon\alpha\iota\tau$ , „ „	$\tau\omicron\epsilon\tau\alpha$ , easy

### THE THIRD DECLENSION.

**146.** The third declension includes all those adjectives which end in **αῖναι**. This termination has the same signification as the English affix *like* in warlike, or *ly* in manly, princely, &c.

In both numbers the two genders are alike. All the cases in the singular are the same, except the genitive, which is formed by adding **α**. This is always accompanied by syncope. All the cases of the plural (except the genitive) are the same as the gen. sing. There are no exceptions or irregularities in this declension.

#### Example.

<b>147.</b>	<b>ῥεαυαῖναι, manly.</b>	
	<b>SINGULAR.</b>	<b>PLURAL.</b>
	Both Genders.	Both Genders.
Nom. & Acc.	ῥεαυαῖναι	ῥεαυαῖντα
Gen.	ῥεαυαῖντα	ῥεαυαῖναι
Dat.	ῥεαυαῖναι	ῥεαυαῖντα
Voc.	ῥεαυαῖναι	ῥεαυαῖντα

### FOURTH DECLENSION.

**148.** All adjectives ending in a vowel belong to the fourth declension, as **ῥαυα**, long; **οῦρα**, golden. They have no inflexions whatever, all the cases, singular and plural, being exactly alike.

There are two exceptions—viz., *ce*, hot, warm; and *beo*, alive. *Te* (often spelled *teit*), becomes *teo* in the genitive singular feminine, and also in the plural of both genders.

*Beo*, alive, becomes *beoða* in the plural. In the singular it is quite regular, except after the word *Ṫia*; its genitive is then *vi*, as *mac Ṫé vi*, the Son of the living God.

### Rules for the Aspiration of the Adjectives.

These rules really belong to Syntax, but for the convenience of the student we give them here.

**149. (a)** An adjective beginning with an aspirable consonant is aspirated in the nominative and accusative feminine singular, in the genitive masculine singular, and in the dative and vocative singular of both genders.

**(b)** The adjective is also aspirated in the nominative and accusative plural when the noun ends in a slender consonant.

### Exceptions to the Rules for Aspiration.

**150. (a)** An adjective beginning with *v* or *t* is usually not aspirated when the noun ends in *v*, *n*, *t*, *l*, or *r* (dentals).

**(b)** *c* and *g* are usually not aspirated when the preceding word ends in *c*, *g*, or *n*.

**(c)** *p* and *b* are usually not aspirated when the preceding word ends in *p*, *b*, or *m*.

These exceptions apply to most rules for the aspiration of nouns as well as adjectives.

(d) The **genitive** of nouns of the 3rd and 5th declensions ought not to have the initial of the adjective following them aspirated. Usage, however, differs somewhat on this point.

(e) In the spoken language of Connaught the adjective is not aspirated in the dative singular masculine.

### Rules for Eclipsing the Adjective.

151. (a) The adjective is usually eclipsed in the genitive plural, even though the article is not used before the noun; and if the adjective begins with a vowel *n* is prefixed.

(b) The initial of an adjective following a noun in the dative sing. should, as a rule, be aspirated; but whenever the noun is eclipsed after the article the adjective is often eclipsed also; aspiration in this case is just as correct as eclipsis, and is more usual.

### Examples

152. Noun, Adjective and Article declined in combination.

	SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
	an fear mór, the big man.	
Nom. & Acc.	an fear mór	na fir móra
Gen.	an fíir móir	na bfeair mór
Dat.	leir an bfeair mór	leir na fearaib móra
Voc.	a fíir móir	a feara móra

an treamhós glar beag, the green little shamrock.

Nom. & Acc. ἀν τρεαμπρός ἑλάρ    να ρεαμπρόσα ἑλάρ  
                    ῥεας                                 ῥεασα

Gen.    na reamróige glaire    na reamróg nglar  
             bise                                mbeas

Dat.      ὁ ν τρεαμπόρις γλαῖρ    ὁ να ρεαμπούδαϊσ  
               βίς                                  γλαρα θεαγα

Voc.     Δ ῥεαμπρός    ἑλαρ    Δ ῥεαμπρόσα ἑλαρα  
              θεας                                θεασα

an t'rean-bean boct, the poor old woman.

Nom. & Acc. an tpean-bean na pean-mná bocta  
boct

Gen.    na ɾeʌn-mná    na ɾeʌn-bʌn mboʊt  
          boiʊtɛ

Dat. ոօ'ն տբան- ւօ նա բան-մնմիւ  
միմայի Եօյէտ Եօժէտ

Уос.     Δ ῥεΔη - θεΔη     Δ ῥεΔη-ῥῖνΔ βοῦτα  
              βοῦτ

N.B.—When an adjective precedes its noun it is invariable.

### Comparison of Adjectives.

153. In Irish there are two comparisons—(1) the comparison of equality, (2) the comparison of superiority.

154. The comparison of equality is formed by placing com (or co), "as" or "so," before the adjective, and te, "as," after it. (This te becomes ter before the article, and then causes eclipsis if the noun be singular.)

If a verb occurs in the second portion of the sentence, *asur* (not *te*) must be used for the second “as” in *English*. *Ṭā Seazān cōm mōp te Seumar*, John is as big as James. *Nī fuit ré cōm lāroip teir an bfeap*, he is not as strong as the man. *Nī fuit ré cōm maic asur (ar) bī ré*, he is not as good as he was.

**155.** The comparison of superiority has three degrees—the positive, the comparative, and the superlative. The positive is the simple form of the adjective, as *bán*, *geat*. The comparative and superlative have exactly the same form as the genitive singular feminine of the adjective, as *báme*, *site*.

**156.** The comparative degree is always preceded by some part of the verb *ir*, expressed or understood, and in almost every case is followed by the word *ná* (or *iona*), “than.”

*Ir site an ḡman ná an ḡeatac,*  
The sun is brighter than the moon.

*An fearr tuar ná do deapbáctair?*  
Are you better than your brother?

**157.** In a comparative sentence the verb *ṭā* (or any other verb) may be used, but even then the verb *ir* must be used.

Whenever *ṭā* (or any other verb) is used in a com-



parative sentence, the comparative must be preceded by the word *níor* (i.e., *ní* or *níò*, a thing, and the verb *ir*) as—

*Tá an ghrian níor gile ná an gealach,*

The sun is brighter than the moon.

*An bfuil tú níor fearr ná do dhearbhadair?*

Are you better than your brother?

**158.** As stated in previous paragraph *níor* = *ní* + *ir*. If the time of the comparison be past *ní ba* is used instead of *níor*. In conditional comparisons *ní baò* is employed.

*Ba dóic liom go raib ūna ní b'aoirve ná Máire.*

I thought that ūna was taller than Máire.

**159. Every superlative sentence in Irish is a relative sentence.** Thus instead of saying "the best man" we say "the man (who) is best"; for "the tallest man," we say "the man (who) is tallest." The word "who" in this case is never translated, for the obvious reason that there is really no simple relative pronoun in Irish.

**160.** If the sentence happens to be in the past or future "the best man" will have to be translated as "the man (who) was best" or "the man (who) will be best." In such cases *ir* or *ar* can never be used. *Ba* or *buò* must be used in the past tense.

If the first portion of the sentence contains a verb in the conditional mood, the conditional of *ir* (viz., *ro baó*: *ro* is often omitted) must be used.

The highest hill in Ireland, *an cnoc ir áiríoe i n-Éirínn.*

The biggest man was sitting in the smallest chair,

*Ói an fear ba mó na fuíoe iní an gcaíaoir ba luíá.*

The best man would have the horse,

*Óo beaó an capall as an bfeair ro b'feairr*

(Lit. The horse would be at the man (who) would be best).

The **English comparative of Inferiority** is translated by *níor luíá* followed by an abstract noun corresponding to the English adjective: *e.g.*, *níor luíá fearmáiteact*, less manly.

### Intensifying Particles.

**161.** The meaning of an adjective can be intensified by placing any of the following particles before the positive of the adjective. All these particles cause aspiration.

*An*, very; *fíor* (or *fír*), very or truly (as truly good); *níog*, very; *níog máit*, very good.

*glé*, pure (as pure white); *ró*, too, excessively.

*rár*, exceedingly; *úr*, very (in a depreciating sense).

*máit*, good; *an-máit*, very good; *fíor-máit*, truly good; *ró-fuar*, too cold.

*rár te*, excessively hot (warm); *úr-íriol*, very low; *úr-ghánra*, very ugly.

**162.** In the spoken language the adjective is sometimes intensified by repeating the positive twice, as—

bí ré tinn tinn, he was very sick.

ta ré trom trom, it is very heavy.

la rluú rluú, a very wet day.

**163.** Sometimes *ve* is annexed to the comparative; it is really the prepositional pronoun *ve*, of it.

lí móve (mó + *ve*) go raḡao. It is not likely that I shall go.

lí míve (meapa + *ve*) beit as bpat opt! It is no harm to be depending on you!

**164.** Although the comparative and the superlative are absolutely alike in form, yet they may be easily distinguished:—

(1) By the context; the comparative can be used only when we are speaking of two persons or things, the superlative is always used for more than two.

(2) By the word *na* (than) which always follows the comparative, except when *ve* is used; the superlative is never followed by either.

**165.** When comparing adjectives (*i.e.*, giving the three degrees of comparison), it is usual to use *níor* before the comparative, and *ir* before the superlative, as—

POSITIVE.	COMPARATIVE.	SUPERLATIVE.
bán	níor báine	ir báine
ḡlar	níor ḡlaire	ir ḡlaire

Remember that *níor* and *ir* change their forms according to the tense of the verb in the sentence.

## 166. Irregular Comparison.

## POSITIVE.

## COMPARATIVE.

beaɣ, little or small

luɣa

faɒa, long

fuitoe, faioe, fia

món, big

mó

otc, bad

meapa

maic, good

feapn

ɣeapn, short

ɣioɾpa

breáɣ,\* fine

breáɣta

minic, often

minici, mionca

te (teit), warm

teó

tirim, dry

tiorpa

fupur(Δ) } easy

{ fupa  
upur } upa

ionmuin, dear, beloved

ionmuine or annpa

ɣap, near (of place)

ɣoipe

foɣup, near

{ foisre  
foirɣe

treun, brave, strong

{ tréine  
treire

ɣpánoa, ugly

ɣpánoe

apo, high

{ áipoe  
aiɾoe  
aoipoe

iomóa, many

mó or lia (more numerous)

neapa and túirɣe, nearer, sooner, are comparatives which have no positive.

N.B.—The superlatives of the above adjectives have exactly the same forms as the comparatives.

\* This word was formerly spelled breáɣta or breáɣta, and these forms may be used in the plural.

## 167. Numeral Adjectives.

## CARDINALS.

1, ἀν...ἀμῶν

2, ὁά

3, τρί,

4, τεῖρε

5, κύς

6, ῥέ

7, ῥεᾶτ

8, ὀτ

9, ἡοί

10, τοί

11, ἀν τοῦ

12, ὁά ὁέας

13, τρί τοῦ

14, τεῖρε ὁέας

15, κύς τοῦ

16, ῥέ τοῦ

17, ῥεᾶτ τοῦ

18, ὀτ τοῦ

19, ἡοί τοῦ

20, ῥί

21, ἀν ἡ (or ἡ) ῥί;  
ἀν ἡ ῥί

## ORDINALS.

1st, τεῖ,\* ἀνμά

2nd, ὁα, ταῖα, ὁμά

3rd, τρίμά τεα

4th, τεῖταμά

5th, κύγεα, κύγμα

6th, ῥεα, ῥέμα

7th, ῥεᾶτμά

8th, ὀτμά

9th, ἡομά

10th, τεᾶμά, τοίεα

11th, ἀνμά τοῦ

12th, ὁα τοῦ

13th, τεα τοῦ, τρίμά  
τοῦ

14th, τεῖταμά τοῦ

15th, κύγεα τοῦ

16th, ῥεα τοῦ

17th, ῥεᾶτμά τοῦ

18th, ὀτμά τοῦ

19th, ἡομά τοῦ

20th, ῥί

21st, ἀνμά ἡ ῥί

\* The c of τεῖ is usually aspirated after the article.

CARDINALS.

22, ո՛Ր օր տձ Իր բի՛ւն; ո՛Ր  
օր տձ Ըր բի՛ւն

28, τῆς ἡρ. πίστε; τῆς ἀπ.  
πίστεως

30, θεὸς ἢ φύς [τρίοδος]

31, don deuz ur fide

32, ʋó or ʋá ʋeuz ɪr fɪce

37, react deus in fide

40, та фiцiо [ceɬɪɫɔ]

41, 400 17 04 1100

44, ceatΔιr or ceitpe ir  
 ʋá fíciʋ

50, τοις ἡ τοῦ φίλου; λει-  
 τεύο, αἰοῦα

51, don deus ir oá fícto

60, τρι φίλο [rearsa]

61, ΔΟΝ ΥΡ ΤΡΙ ΡΙΔΙΟ

70, τοῖς ἰσ. τῇ φύσει  
[ρεακτομοζα]

71, don deus ir tri fido

30, ceitre picro [octr-  
moza]

81, don't centre fiction

90, Եւեւ իր շէտքը քիւտ  
[նոճձ]

## ORDINALS.

22nd, ὁ δὲ ἀνὴρ ᾤκιστο ;  
ὁ δὲ ἀνὴρ... ᾤκεετο

23rd, τριονιάς ἀν' ἑξέτη οὐ  
τρεῖς ἀν' ἑξέτη

30th, veačmāṭ ar fīcīṭ

31st, donnadò teus ar  
ficio

32nd,  $\tau\alpha\mu\alpha$   $\tau\epsilon\upsilon\varsigma$   $\alpha\pi$   $\tau\acute{\iota}\sigma\iota\tau$

37th, reactmāto veus an  
ficio

40th, τὰ πικρὰ

41st, 40mΔθ Δρ θά ρίσιθ

44th, ceatpamav ar oá  
ficio

50th, teachmāō an ōā pīcīō

51st, donmado deus an oá  
ficio

60th, τρι ριςινδεαθ

61st, donmāṭ aṇ tṛi pīcīṭ

70th, θεακμάδὸ ἀπ' ἐπὶ πικίον

71st, ἀποκρίσεις αὐτῶν ἐπὶ  
τοῖς

80th, ceitne fíoréad

81st, donnadō ar ceizpe  
ficio

90th, ueacmab ar ceitpe  
riob



## CARDINALS.

91, $\Delta$ on $\nu$ eug $\text{ir}$ ceit $\nu$ e $\text{fí}$ cí $\nu$	
100, cé $\Delta$ o (ce $\nu$ o)	
101, $\Delta$ on $\text{ir}$ ce $\nu$ o	
200, $\nu$ á ce $\nu$ o	
300, $\tau$ rí ce $\nu$ o	
400, ceit $\nu$ e ce $\nu$ o	
800, o $\acute{\epsilon}$ t $\xi$ ce $\nu$ o	
1000, míle	
2000, $\nu$ á míle	
3000, $\tau$ rí míle	
4000, ceit $\nu$ e míle	
1,000,000, milliún	

## ORDINALS.

91st, $\Delta$ on $\acute{\mu}$ á $\nu$ $\nu$ eug $\Delta$ $\text{ir}$ ceit $\nu$ e $\text{fí}$ cí $\nu$	
100th, ce $\nu$ o $\Delta$ ó	
101st, $\Delta$ on $\acute{\mu}$ á $\nu$ $\Delta$ $\text{ir}$ ce $\nu$ o	
200th, $\nu$ á ce $\nu$ o $\Delta$ ó	
300th, $\tau$ rí ce $\nu$ o $\Delta$ ó	
400th, ceit $\nu$ e ce $\nu$ o $\Delta$ ó	
800th, o $\acute{\epsilon}$ t $\xi$ ce $\nu$ o $\Delta$ ó	
1000th, míle $\Delta$ ó	
2000th, $\nu$ á míle $\Delta$ ó	
3000th, $\tau$ rí míle $\Delta$ ó	
4000th, ceit $\nu$ e míle $\Delta$ ó	
1,000,000th, milliún $\Delta$ ó	

## Notes on the Numerals.

**168.** There is another very idiomatic way of expressing the numbers above twenty-one, viz., by placing the word  $\text{fí}$ cé $\Delta$ o alone after the first numeral:— $\nu$ eic  $\text{fí}$ cé $\Delta$ o, 30:  $\text{fí}$ cé $\Delta$ o is really the genitive of  $\text{fí}$ ce, so that the literal meaning of  $\nu$ eic  $\text{fí}$ cé $\Delta$ o is ten of twenty;  $\nu$ eic  $\xi$ capaill  $\text{fí}$ cé $\Delta$ o, 30 horses;  $\text{re}$ á $\acute{\epsilon}$ t m $\Delta$ a  $\text{fí}$ cé $\Delta$ o, 27 cows.

**169.** Whenever any numeral less than twenty is used by itself (*i.e.*, not followed immediately by a noun), the particle  $\Delta^*$  must be used before it. This  $\Delta$  prefixes  $n$ - to vowels:— $\Delta$   $n$ - $\Delta$ on, one;  $\Delta$   $\nu$ ó, two;  $\Delta$   $n$ -o $\acute{\epsilon}$ t, eight.

$\tau$ á  $\text{ré}$   $\Delta$  ceat $\Delta$ ir  $\Delta$  clog, it is four o'clock.

$\tau$ á  $\text{ré}$  leat-uair  $\nu$ 'éir  $\Delta$   $\nu$ ó, it is half past two.

---

\* In Ulster and Munster the article  $\Delta n$  is used instead of this  $\Delta$ .



170. Very frequently in modern times the particle  $\Delta\pi$  (=  $\Delta\zeta\pi$ ) is used instead of  $\pi$  in numbers.  $\Delta\pi$  in numbers is pronounced iss.

171.  $\Delta$   $\upsilon\acute{o}$  and  $\Delta$   $\text{ceat}\acute{\alpha}\pi$  can be used only in the absence of nouns. If the nouns be expressed immediately after "two" and "four,"  $\upsilon\acute{\alpha}$  and  $\text{ceit}\pi\epsilon$  must be used.

172.  $\Delta\text{on}$ , one, when used with a noun almost always takes the word  $\Delta\eta\acute{\alpha}\pi$  after the noun; as,  $\Delta\text{on } \pi\epsilon\alpha\pi \Delta\eta\acute{\alpha}\pi$ , one man.  $\Delta\text{on}$  by itself usually means "any;" as,  $\Delta\text{on } \pi\epsilon\alpha\pi$ , any man;  $\Delta\text{on } \iota\acute{\alpha}$ , any day. Sometimes  $\Delta\text{on}$  is omitted and  $\Delta\eta\acute{\alpha}\pi$  only is used, as  $\iota\acute{\alpha} \Delta\eta\acute{\alpha}\pi$ , one day.

173. Under the heading "Ordinals" two forms will be found for nearly all the smaller numbers. *The forms given first are the ones generally used.* As the secondary forms are often met with in books, they are given for the sake of reference.  $\text{C}\acute{\epsilon}\Delta\upsilon$ , first, is used by itself, but  $\Delta\text{on}\eta\acute{\alpha}\upsilon$  is used in compound numbers, such as 21st, 31st, &c.

First, as an adverb, is  $\Delta\pi$   $\upsilon$ - $\tau\acute{\upsilon}\pi$  or  $\Delta\pi$   $\upsilon$ - $\tau\acute{\upsilon}\pi\pi$ , never,  $\text{ceuro}$ .

174. The  $\upsilon$  of  $\upsilon\acute{\alpha}$ , two is always aspirated except after a word ending in one of the letters,  $\upsilon$ ,  $\eta$ ,  $\tau$ ,  $\iota$ ,  $\pi$ , or after the possessive adjective  $\Delta$ , her.

The words for 30, 40, 50, 60, 70, 80, 90, given in brackets, are the old words for these numbers; they are not used now, and are given simply for reference.

175. *ῥίσε*, *σευο*, and *μίτε*, together with the old words for 30, 40, 50, &c., are really nouns\* and can be declined.

Nom. <i>ῥίσε</i>	gen. <i>ῥίσεαο</i>	dat. <i>ῥίσιο</i>	pl. <i>ῥίσιο</i>
„ <i>σευο</i>	„ <i>σέιο</i>	„ <i>σευο</i>	„ <i>σευοτα</i>
„ <i>μίτε</i>	„ <i>μίτε</i>	„ <i>μίτε</i>	„ <i>μίλτε</i>

The other words are 5th declension, and form their genitive by adding *ο*.

176. *Μίτε*, a thousand, or a mile, and *σευο*, a hundred never change their forms after a numeral; *ἑναοι μίτε*, 9,000, or 9 miles.

### The Personal Numerals.

177. The following numeral nouns are used especially of persons. All, with the exception of *οἶρ* and *βεῖρτ*, are compounds of the word *ῥεαρ*, a man (the *ρ* of which has disappeared owing to aspiration), and the numeral adjectives.

<i>ἄοναρ†</i> ( <i>ἄον-ῥεαρ</i> )	one person
[ <i>οἶρ</i> ( <i>οἶαρ</i> )]	a pair, a couple
<i>βεῖρτ</i>	two persons, a couple‡
<i>τριῦρ</i> (or <i>τριαρ</i> ) ( <i>τρι-ῥεαρ</i> )	three persons
<i>σεατραρ</i> ( <i>σεατ-αρ-ῥεαρ</i> )	four persons
<i>κούγεαρ</i>	five persons
<i>ρεῖρεαρ</i>	six persons

\* See Syntax, par. 511 and 512.

† Used in the idiomatic expression for "alone." See par. 654.

‡ *ἑνάμα*, a married couple.

móir-íeirear }	seven persons
reáctar }	
oútar	eight persons
náonbhar or nónbhar	nine persons
deicneabhar	ten persons
doíreus (doí-eir-íeus)	twelve persons

**N.B.**—The singular form of the article is used before these numerals; as *an cúigear fear*, the five men.

### The Possessive Adjectives.

178. The term “possessive pronouns” has been incorrectly applied by many grammarians to the “possessive adjectives.” A pronoun is a word that can stand for a noun and be separated from the noun, as the words “mine” and “his” in the sentences, “This book is mine,” “This cap is his.” If I wish to say in Irish, “Did you see his father and mine?” I say, “*An bhacair a ádair ašur m’ ádair*” (not *ašur mo*). The possessive adjectives in Irish can never stand alone; hence they are not pronouns.

179. The possessive adjectives are as follows:—

SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
mo, my	ár, our
do, thy	bur (or <i>bhar</i> ), your
a, his or her	a, their

180. *a*, his; *a*, her; and *a*, their, are very easily distinguished by their initial effects on the following word.

181. The *o* of *mo* and *ʋo* is elided whenever they are followed by a word beginning with a vowel or *ʃ*, as *m' ʃuinneðs*, my window; *ʋ' ΔtΔiʀ*, thy father.

182. Before a vowel *ʋo*, *thy*, is very often written *ɕ* or *č*, as *ʋ' ΔtΔiʀ*, *ɕ' ΔtΔiʀ*, *č' ΔtΔiʀ*, thy father; even *n-ΔtΔiʀ* is sometimes wrongly written.

183. The possessive adjectives may take an emphatic increase, but this emphatic particle always follows the noun, and is usually joined to it by a hyphen; and should the noun be followed by one or more adjectives which qualify it, the emphatic particle is attached to the last qualifying adjective.

### The Emphatic Particles.

184. The emphatic particles can be used with (1) the possessive adjectives, (2) the personal pronouns, (3) the prepositional pronouns, and (4) the synthetic forms of the verbs. Excepting the first person plural all the particles have two forms. When the word to which they are attached ends in a *broad* vowel or consonant use the broad particles, otherwise employ the slender.

	SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
1.	-ɾΔ, -ɾe	-ne
2	-ɾΔ, -ɾe	-ɾΔ, -ɾe
3.	{ Masc., -ɾΔn, -ɾeΔn Fem., -ɾe, -ɾi	-ɾΔn, -ɾeΔn

## Examples.

mo teaċ-ra, *my* house; a teaċ-ran, *his* house; āp oteaċ-ne, *our* house: mire, *myself*; peirean, *himself*; aca-ran, *at themselves*; buaitim-re, *I strike*.

185. The word féin may also be used (generally as a distinct word) to mark emphasis, either by itself or in conjunction with the emphatic particles: as

mo teaċ féin, *my own* house

mo teaċ-ra féin, *even my* house

mo teaċ breáġ mór-ra, *my fine large* house

mo teaċ féin and mo teaċ-ra may both mean “my house,” but the latter is used when we wish to distinguish our own property from that of another person; as, your house and mine, ro teaċ-ra ašur mo teaċ-ra.

186. The possessive adjectives are frequently compounded with the following prepositions:—

i, in (ann), in; le, with; ro, to; ó, from; and rá, under.

## SINGULAR.

## PLURAL.

i, in or ann, in.

im, am 'mo, in my

nár, nár, i n-ár, in our

ro, aro, 'ro, in thy, in your

nbur, i nbur, in your

'na, i n-a, ina, in his, in her

na, i n-a, ina, in their

In the third person singular and plural iona, ionna, anna are also found written.

187.

le, with.

tem, le mo,* with my	le n-Δr, with our
leo, le oo,* with thy or your	le nður, with your
le n-Δ, with his or her	le n-Δ, with their

188.

oo, to.

oom', oo mo,* to my	oΔr, to our
oov', oo oo,* to thy or your	oo ður, oΔ ður, to your
oΔ, to his or her	oΔ, to their

189.

o, from.

om, o mo,* from my	o n-Δr, from our
oo, o oo,* from thy or your	o nður, from your
o n-Δ, from his or her	o n-Δ, from their

190.

fá or fó, under.

fám, fóm, under my	fá n-Δr, fó n-Δr, under our
fáoo, fóoo, under thy, your	fá nður, fó nður, under your
fá n-Δ, fó n-Δ, under his, her	fá n-Δ, fó n-Δ, under their

191. The following compounds are frequently used with verbal nouns:—

Δs, at.

Δsom, Δs mo,* at my	'sΔr, sΔr, Δs Δr, at our
Δsoo, Δs oo,* at thy, your	Δs ður, at your
ΔsÁ, 'sΔ, sΔ, at his, her	ΔsÁ, 'sΔ, or sΔ, at their

---

\* The forms marked with an asterisk are used in the North.



192. When "you" and "your" refer to one person, the singular words *tú* and *úo* are used in Irish, *o'atair*, your father (when speaking to one person), *úur n-atair*, your father (when speaking to more than one.)

193. Those of the above combinations which are alike in form are distinguished by the initial effect they cause in the following word; as, *ó n-a tís*, from his house; *ó n-a tís*, from her house; *ó n-a útís*, from their house.

194. The above combinations may take the same emphatic increase as the uncompound possessive adjectives; *óm tís féin*, from *my* own house; *óm tís úreáð mór-ra*, from *my* fine large house.

### Demonstrative Adjectives.

195. The demonstrative adjectives are *ro*,\* this; *rin*,† that; and *úo*, that or yonder.

*ro* is frequently written *reo* when the vowel or consonant preceding it is slender.

These words come after the nouns they qualify, and should the noun be followed by any qualifying adjectives, *ro*, *rin* or *úo* comes after the last qualifying adjective.

It is not enough to say *féar ro* or *bean rin* for "this man" or "that woman." The noun must

\* Also *ra*, *reo*, or *re*.

† Also *roin*, *rain* or *ran*.



always be preceded by the article. "This man" is *an fear ro*; "these men," *na fir reo*; *an bean ro*, this woman; *an bean rin*, that woman.

196. The word *úto* is used when a person or thing is connected in some way with the person to whom you speak or write; *an fear úto*, that man (whom you have seen or heard of); *an oíche úto*, that particular night which you remember; or in pointing out an object at some distance, as—

*An bpreiceann tú an báto úto?* Do you see that boat?

Also with the vocative case, as—

*A cloiginn úto tál atá gan teangaib.*

Thou skull over there that art without tongue.

### Indefinite Adjectives.

197. The chief indefinite adjectives are—*aon*, any; *éigin*, some, certain; *eile*, other; *uite* (*after the noun*), all, whole; and the phrase *ar bít*, any at all; *pé*, whatever.

*e.g.*, *aon lá*, any day; *aon capall*, any horse; *an tír uite*, the whole country; *tuine éigin*, a certain person; *an fear eile*, the other man. *An bfacea tú an leabhar i n-áit ar bít?* Did you see the book anywhere? *Ní fuil airgead ar bít agam*, I have no money at all. *Biteamaic tob' ead an Siogaidhe, pé uairteact ro bí aige nó ná raib.* The Siogaidhe was a rascal, whatever nobility he had or hadn't.

198. The following words are *nouns*, and are fol-

lowed by a genitive or *ve* with the dative. As they are employed to translate English indefinite adjectives, we give them here:—

mórán, much	ḃruit mórán fíona aḡat, Have you much wine?
(an) iomaṑ, a great deal, a great many	an iomaṑ aṙḡiṑ, a great deal of money
beaḡán, little	beaḡán aṙáin, a little bread
(an) iomaṙca, too much	an iomaṙca uṙḡe, too much water
an-ḡuṙ, rather much	an-ḡuṙ ṙalaṙnn, rather much salt
ṑóḡain, } ṙáit, } enough, sufficient	ṑá mo ṑóḡain aṙáin aḡam, I have sufficient bread
oiṙeaṑ (aḡuṙ), as much (as), so much (as)	an oiṙeaṑ ṙin óṙ, so much gold.
ṑuilleaṑ, more	ṑuilleaṑ aṙáin, more bread
neaṙṑ, plenty, abundance	neaṙṑ aṙḡiṑ, plenty of money
ḡuṙ, ṙoinn or ṙoinnt, a share, some	ḡuṙ, ṙoinn or ṙoinnt óṙ, some gold
a lán, many, numerous	ṑá a lán ṙeaṙ mbṙeaḡ i n-éṙinn. There are many fine men in Ireland

### 199. Translation of the word "Some."

(a) As has been said, *ḡuṙ*, *ṙoinn* or *ṙoinnt* is used to translate the word "some," but there are other words used, as *ḃṙaon*, a drop, used for liquids; *ṑoṙnán*

or *uoirnín*, a fistfull, used for hay, straw, corn, potatoes, &c.; *ḡrainín*, a grain, used for meal, flour, tea, &c.; *pinginn*, a penny, used for money. All these words take a genitive.

(b) "Some of" followed by a noun is translated by *curo ve* followed by a dative case.

(c) "Some of" followed by a singular pronoun is translated by *curo ve*; when followed by a plural pronoun, by *curo aḡ*.

Ṭá bṛaon bainne aḡam,	I have some milk
Ṭá ḡrainín riúcrá aḡe,	He has some sugar
Curo ve na fearaib,	Some of the men
Ṭá curo ve rin olc,	Some of that is bad
Ṭá curo aḡa ro olc,	Some of these are bad

### Translation of "Any."

200. (a) When "any" is used in connection with objects that are usually counted it is translated by *aon* with a singular noun; as *aon fear*, any man; *bṛuit aon éapall aḡat?* or *bṛuit capall ar bit aḡat?* Have you any horses?

The following phrases followed by a genitive case are used for "any" with objects that are not counted: *aon ḡneim*, for bread, butter, meat, &c.: *aon veór*, for liquids; *aon ḡrainín*, for tea, sugar, &c.; *bṛuit aon ḡneim feola aḡe?* Has he any meat?

(b) "Any of" followed by a noun is translated by *aon uinne ve*, for persons; *aon éann ve*, for any kind of countable objects; *aon ḡneim ve*, &c., as

above. *An b'aca tú aon uire de na fearaib?* Did you see any of the men? &c.

(c) "Any of" followed by a plural pronoun is translated by the phrases given in (b), but the preposition *as* is used instead of *de*; as—

*Ní fuit aon céann aca annsin.* There is not any of them there.

*Ní raib aon uine asainn annro céana.* Not one of us was here before.

### Distributive Adjectives.

201. *ḡac*, each, every, as *ḡac lá*, every day: *uite* (before the noun), every; the definite article, or *ḡac*, must be used with *uite*; as *an uite fear*, every man. *Uí ḡac uite céann aca tinn.* Every one of them was sick.

*ḡac re*, every other, every second; *ḡac re b'ocail*, every second word.

### 202. The Interrogative Adjectives.

*ca* or *cé*, what, as *cé méad*. what amount?  
*i.e.*, how much or how many?

*ca h-áit*, what place? *ca h-ainm atá ort?* What is your name? *ca h-uair*, what hour? when?

In English we say "what a man," "what a start," &c., but in Irish we say "what the man," "what the start," as *caibé an geit do bainfead ré airtí!* What a fright he would give her! (lit. he would take out of her).

## CHAPTER IV.

## The Pronoun.

203. In Irish there are nine classes of Pronouns:—Personal, Reflexive, Prepositional, Relative, Demonstrative, Indefinite, Distributive, Interrogative, and Reciprocal pronouns. There are no Possessive pronouns in Irish.

## 204. Personal Pronouns.

	SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
1st pers.	mé, I	rinn, we
2nd pers.	tú, thou	rib, you
3rd pers.	{ré, he rí, she	riao, they

Each of the above may take an **emphatic increase**, equivalent to the English suffix *self*.

## 205.

**Emphatic Forms of the Personal Pronouns.**

1st pers.	míre, myself	rinne, ourselves
2nd pers.	túra, thyself	ribre, yourselves
3rd pers.	{reirean, himself ríre, herself	riao-ran, themselves

206. The word féin is added to the personal pronouns to form the **reflexive pronouns**; as do buairear mé féin, I struck myself.

The reflexive pronouns are as follows : —

SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
mé féin, myself	rinn féin, ourselves
tú féin, thyself	rib féin, yourselves
é féin, himself	
i féin, herself	iad féin, themselves

207. The above are also used as *emphatic pronouns* ; as, Cuaðamar a baite, mé féin agur é féin. Both he and I went home.

## 208. The Personal Pronouns have no declension.

It has already been shown that mo, oo, a, etc., which are usually given as the genitive cases of the personal pronouns, are not pronouns, but adjectives ; because they can never be used without a noun.

The compounds of the pronouns with the preposition oo (to) are usually given as the dative cases of the personal pronouns ; but agam, agat, etc., or the compounds with any of the other prepositions in par. 216, are just as much the datives of the personal pronouns as dom, duit, &c. Hence the *Irish personal pronouns have no declension*.

209. The Personal Pronouns have however *two forms* :—The **conjunctive** and the **disjunctive**. The **conjunctive forms** are used only immediately after a verb as its subject ; in all other positions the **disjunctive forms** must be used. The **disjunctive forms** are also used after the verb *ir*



The reason why these forms follow *ir* is that the word immediately after *ir* is *predicate*,\* not *subject*; and it has just been stated that the conjunctive forms can be used only in immediate connection with a verb as its subject.

### Conjunctive Pronouns.

210. mé, tú, ré, rí, rinn, ríð, ríad.

### Disjunctive Pronouns.

211. mé, { tú, é, í, { rinn, { ríð, 1ad,  
          { tú,                    { inn,    { íð,

In mé, tú, tú, the vowel is often shortened in Munster, when there is no stress or emphasis. It is shortened in mé, ré, é, ríad and 1ad in Ulster, when there is no stress.

212. The disjunctive pronouns can be *nominatives* to verbs, but then they will be separated from the verbs: or they may be used in immediate connection with a verb as *its object*.

He is a man, *ir fear é* (nominative).

He was the king, *rob'é an rí é* (both nominatives).

This is smaller than that, *ir tuḡa é reo ná é ríúo*  
(both nominatives).

I did not strike him, *níor buairear é* (accusative).

---

\* This statement will be explained later on. See par 589.



### The Neuter Pronoun *eað*.

213. The pronoun *eað* is most frequently used in replying to a question asked with any part of the verb *ir* followed by an indefinite predicate.\* *Nað breáð an lá é? Ir eað go deimhin.* Isn't it a fine day? It is indeed. *An Safranac é? Ní n-eað.* Is he an Englishman? He is not.

This pronoun corresponds very much with the "unchangeable *le*" in French: *as, Etes-vous sage? Oui, je le suis.*

Whenever *ir* in the question is followed by a pronoun, *eað* cannot be used in the reply. *An é Cormac an rí? Ní n-é.* Is Cormac the king? He is not.

*Ir eað* is usually contracted to *'reað* (*shāh*).

214. The phrase *ir eað* (*'reað*) is often used to refer to a clause going before; as, *i gCatair na Mart, ir eað, coṛaíl mé aréir.* In Westport, it was, that I slept last night. *Nuair ir mó an anfochain (anachain), ir eað, ir goire an cāḃair.* When the distress is greatest, then it is that help is nearest.

215. In Munster when the predicate is an indefinite noun it is usual to turn the whole sentence into an *eað*-phrase; as—It is a fine day. *Lá breáð, 'reað é.* He is a priest. *Sagart, 'reað é.* He was a slave. *Ṍaor, tob 'eað é.* Elsewhere these sentences would be, *ir lá breáð é; ir sagart é; ba Ṍaor é.*

---

\* For "indefinite predicate" refer to par. 585.

**Prepositional Pronouns**  
or  
**Pronominal Prepositions.**

**216.** Fifteen of the simple prepositions combine with the disjunctive forms of the personal pronouns; and to these combinations is given the name of Prepositional Pronouns or Pronominal Prepositions.

All these compounds are very important. As five or six of them occur most frequently these will be given first, and the remainder, if so desired, may be left until the second reading of the book. The important combinations are those of the prepositions, *at*, *on*, *to*, *with*, *from*, and *towards*.

All the combinations may take an emphatic suffix. One example will be given.

	SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
217.	<i>at</i> or <i>with</i> .	
1st pers.	<i>at me</i>	<i>at us</i>
2nd pers.	<i>at thee</i>	<i>at you</i>
3rd pers.	<i>at him</i> <i>at her</i>	<i>at them</i>

**218.** The combinations of *at* with the emphatic suffixes.

1st pers.	<i>at myself</i>	<i>at ourselves</i>
2nd pers.	<i>at thyself</i>	<i>at yourselves</i>
3rd pers.	<i>at himself</i> <i>at herself</i>	<i>at themselves</i>

## SINGULAR.

## PLURAL.

219.

ar, on.

1st pers. or<sup>m</sup>, on meor<sup>ainn</sup>, on us2nd pers. or<sup>t</sup>, on theeor<sup>ai<sup>b</sup></sup>, on you3rd pers. { ar, on him  
uir<sup>ru</sup> or uir<sup>ti</sup>, on heror<sup>ta</sup> or or<sup>ra</sup>, on them

220.

o, to.

1st pers. { o<sup>m</sup>,\* to me  
o<sup>am</sup>,o<sup>ainn</sup>, to us2nd pers. ou<sup>t</sup>, to theeo<sup>ai<sup>b</sup></sup>, o<sup>i<sup>b</sup></sup>, to you3rd pers. { o to him  
oi, to hero<sup>i<sup>b</sup></sup>, to them

The initial o of these combinations and also those of oe are usually aspirated except after a word ending in one of the letters o, n, t, l, r.

221.

le, with.

u<sup>om</sup>, with meu<sup>inn</sup>, with usle<sup>at</sup>, with theeu<sup>i<sup>b</sup></sup>, with youle<sup>r</sup>, with himle<sup>i</sup>,  
le<sup>ti</sup>, } with herle<sup>o</sup>, with them

222.

o, or u<sup>a</sup>,† from.u<sup>aim</sup>, from meu<sup>ainn</sup>, from usu<sup>ai<sup>t</sup></sup>, „ theeu<sup>ai<sup>b</sup></sup>, „ youu<sup>ai<sup>o</sup></sup>,† „ himu<sup>at<sup>a</sup></sup>, „ themu<sup>ai<sup>ti</sup></sup>, „ her

\* o<sup>aim</sup> (= o<sup>m</sup>) is the literary and also the Ulster usage. The emphatic form is o<sup>om<sup>ra</sup></sup>, never o<sup>omp<sup>a</sup></sup>, except in Connaught.

† u<sup>a</sup> is never used as a simple preposition.

‡ u<sup>ai<sup>o</sup></sup> and u<sup>ai<sup>oe</sup></sup> (= u<sup>ai<sup>o</sup></sup>) are also both literary and spoken forms.

SINGULAR.		PLURAL.	
223.	cun, towards.		
cugam,*	towards me	cugainn,	towards us
cugac, }	" thee	cugaiḃ,	" you
cugao, }			
cuiġe,	" him	cúca,	" them
cuiċi,	" her		
224.	roim, before.		
roimam,	before me	roimainn,	before us
roimac, }	" thee	roimaiḃ,	" you
roimao, }			
roime, }	" him		" them
roimip, }		roimpa,	
roimpi,	" her		
225.	ar, out.		
aram,	out of me	arainn,	out of us
arac, }	" thee	araiḃ,	" you
arao, }			
ar,	" him	arta,	" them
airċi,	" her		
226.	i, in (or ann) in.		
ionnam,	in me	ionnainn,	in us
ionnac,	" thee	ionnaiḃ,	" you
ann,	" him	ionnta,	" them
innti,	" her		
227.	oe, off, from.		
oíom,	off or from me	oíinn,	off or from us
oíoc,	" thee	oíḃ,	" you
oe,	" him	oíob,	" them
oi,	" her		

\* The ġ in these combinations is aspirated in Munster, except in cuiġe.

## SINGULAR.

## PLURAL.

228.           ρε, ρά, ραοι, under.

ρῦμ, under me

ρῦνν, under us

ρῦτ, „ thee

ρῦβ, „ you

ραοι, „ him

ρῦτα, „ them

ρῦτι, „ her

229.           ιοιρ, between.

εαορμ, between me

εαορμν, between us

εαορατ, „ thee

εαοραιβ, „ you

ιοιρ ε, „ him

εαορμν } „ them

ιοιρ ι, „ her

(or εαορα)

230.           ταρ, over or beyond.

εαρμ or εορμ, over me

εαρμν or εορμν, over us

εαρτ or εορτ, „ thee

εαραιβ „ εοραιβ, „ you

εαιρμ, „ him

εαιρμ or εαιρτι, „ her

εαρν } εαρτα „ εαρτα, „ them

231.           τρε, through.

τρισμ, through me

τρινν, through us

τριστ, „ thee

τριβ, „ you

τριτο, „ him

τριτι, „ her

τριστα, „ them

The τ of these combinations is often aspirated.

232.           um, about.

umam, about me

umamn, about us

υματ, „ thee

υμαιβ, „ you

υιμε, „ him

υιμπι, „ her

υμπα, „ them

## The Relative Pronoun.

In Old Irish there was a relative particle used after prepositions, and also a compound relative, but no simple relative in the nominative and accusative cases. The modern relative, in these cases, has arisen from a mistaken idea about certain particles. Before the imperfect, the past, and conditional the particle *vo* should, strictly speaking, be used. Certain irregular but often used verbs had also an unaccented first syllable, as *atá*, *vo-deirim*, *vo-cím*, &c. These particles and syllables being unaccented were generally dropped at the beginning, but retained in the body, of a sentence, where the relative naturally occurs. Hence they were erroneously regarded as relative pronouns, from analogy with other languages.

In Modern Irish the relative particle may or may not be used in the nominative and accusative cases.

Although this is the origin of the modern relative nevertheless it is used as a real relative in modern Irish. Whether we call this a relative particle or a relative pronoun is a mere matter of choice. We prefer the first name.

There is a relative frequently met with in authors, viz.—*noč*, meaning *who*, *which* or *that*. This relative is not used in modern spoken Irish, in fact it seems never to have been used in the spoken language.

233. In modern Irish there are three simple relatives, the relative particles *Δ* and *SO*, which signify *who*, *which*, or *that*; and the negative particle *nač*, signifying *who...not*, *which...not*, *that...not*.

The relative *so* is not found in literature, but it is so generally used in the spoken dialect of Munster that it must be regarded as a true relative. *So* is not used as the subject or object of a verb, its use is confined to the *prepositional (dative)* case.

There are also the compound relatives *pé*, *gibé*, *cibé*, *whoever*, *whosoever*, *whatever*, and *Δ* (causing eclipsis) *what*, *that* *which*, *all that*.

234. The relative particle *Δ* expressed or understood, causes aspiration; but when preceded by a preposition or when it means “all that,” it causes eclipsis. as do *SO* and *nač*.



Δν fear a buailim.	The man whom I strike.
Δν fear a buaileann mé.	The man who strikes me.
Δν buacail naé mbeiré as obair.	The boy who will not be at work.
Δν bean go bfuil an bó aici.	The woman who has the cow.
Δ gcaitim ran lá.	All that I spend per day.
Sin a raib ann.	That's all that was there.
Do rgaric a raib láitreach.	All who were present burst out laughing.
Δν áit 'na bfuil pé.	The place in which he is.

**235. The relative Δ when governed by a preposition, or when it means "all that," unites with po,** the particle formerly used before the past tense of regular verbs, and becomes ar. This ar unites with the prepositions do (to) and le (with) and becomes dár and ler.

Ar éaicéar ran lá.	All that I spent per day.
Δν fear dár gcaillar mo leabhar. or	The man to whom I promised my book.
Δν fear ar gcaillar mo leabhar dó.	
Δν trlat ler buaileasó é.	The rod with which he was beaten.

**236. The pronouns cé and pé unite with po,** but only with the verb ir.

Cé 'r b'í féin?	Who was she?
pé 'r b'é féin?	Whoever he was

**237. Whenever the relative follows a superlative, or any phrase of the nature of a superlative, use da (=de + a).** Before the past tense of regular verbs da becomes dár (=da + po)

Béarfas doir gac uile níó da bfuil asam.  
I will give you *everything* that I have.

Ir é rin an fear ir doirde dár buail liom riam.  
That is the *tallest* man that I have ever met.

Ni maic leir don níó da dtugas dó.  
He does not like a single thing I gave him.



### Demonstrative Pronouns.

**238.** The demonstrative pronouns are *ro* or *reo*, *this*; *rin*, *rain*, *roin*, *ran*, *that*; *riú* or *riúo*, *that (yonder)*. The secondary forms *o* or *eo*, *in*, and *iúo* are very common in colloquial usage in Connaught and Munster.

These secondary forms have sometimes been written *jo*, *fin*, etc.

*Ir fíor rin.* That is true.

*'Seadó ran.* The matter is so.

*Tá ré go h-aindeir agat,* You have it in a mess, so  
*tá ran* you have.

*U'in í an áit.* That was the place.

*Deirim-re guró iúo é an* I say that that is the man  
*féar úib.* for you.

*B' in é críoc an rgeil.* That was the end of the  
*An in é an bogsa?* Is that the box? [affair.

*Ní h-óí an áit.* This is not the place.

*B' in é an buacailt cuige.* That was the boy for it.

**239.** When we are referring to a definite object these pronouns take the form *é reo*, *í reo*, *iao ro*, *é rin*, *í rin*, *iao rain*, etc. This is especially the case when the English words "this," "that," etc., are equivalent to "*this one*," "*that one*," etc.

*Tóg é rin.* Lift (or take) that.

*'Sé reo an féar.* This is the man.

*'Dob' é rin Seagán.* That was John.

*'Sí rin Brigid.* That's Brigid.

*Cé h-iao ro?* Who are these?

*An é riúo Tomás.* Is that (person yonder)  
Thomas?

*Ní h-é, 'ré riúo é, or* No; that's he.  
*riúo é é.*

'Sé reo = ir é reo ; 'Sé rin = ir é rin, etc.

In the spoken language the phrases ir é rin é, ir é riú é, etc, are very frequently contracted to rin é, rin í, riú é, etc.

Síú é.	That is he.
Síú é Taúg.	Yonder is Thade.
Sin é an capúr.	That's the hammer.

The forms riné, riní, rióé, rióí, are also frequently used.

Síóé atá orm.	That is what ails me.
Siní an áit.	That's the place.
Síóí annro í.	Here she is here.
Siní í.	That is she (or it).
Síóé é.	This is he (or it).

**240.** Súo, yonder, qualifies a pronoun; whilst úo qualifies a noun: as, an fear úo, yonder man; a fear riú, yonder woman's husband.

### Indefinite Pronouns.

- 241.** The principal indefinite pronouns are—  
 các (gen. cáic), all, everybody, everyone else.  
 uile, all.  
 éinne, éinneac (dom'ne), anybody.

The following are *nouns*, but they are used to translate English indefinite pronouns, hence we give them here :—

duine ar bít, anyone at all.  
 cuid...cuid eile, some...others  
 beagán, a few.

An tóráinig éinne annro? Did anyone come here?

"Cia h-é do báir an macrair?" ar cás. "Who is he who drowned the youths?" said all.

Cé meud uball agat? (or An 'mó uball agat?)

Tá beagán agam. How many apples have you?

I have a few.

Uile dóir. To them all.

Do-geibmís uile an báir. We all die.

Do cuair po uile reáda amáir ríáile. All these went past like a shadow.

### Distributive Pronouns.

242. The distributive pronouns are:—*gac*, each; *gac uile*, everyone; *gac aon*, each one, everyone; *ceachtar*, either. '*Cuile* is a contraction for *gac uile*. *Nilí fúil ceachtar aca agam*, I have not either of them.

*Díor a fíor ag gac aon*. Let each one know.

*Óir bíonn (bí) fíoc Dé leir (uir) gac h-aon cáillear a reáct*. For the anger of God is on each one who violates His law.

**N.B.**—The tendency in present-day usage is to employ distributive adjectives followed by appropriate nouns rather than distributive pronouns: *e.g.* Everyone went home. *Do cuair gac uile tuine a báile*.

## Interrogative Pronouns.

243. The chief interrogative pronouns are:—*cia* or *cé*, who, which; *caó*, *ceuto*, or *caíodé*, what; *cé* or *ceuto* (*cia fuo*), what; *cia leir*, whose; *cia áca* (*cioca*), which of them. *cé* (or *cia*) *ágaib*, which of you.

*Cé rinne é rin?* Who did that?

*Caó atá ágat?* What have you?

*Caó é rin ágat?* What is that you have?

*Caíodé atá ort?*  
*Caó tá ort?* } What ails you?

*Cé áca ir fearr?*  
*Cioca ir fearr?* } Which of them is the better?

*Cia an fear?* Which or what man?

*Cia na fir?* Which men?

*Cia an luac?* What price?

*Caíodé an fuo é rin?* What is that?

*Cé leir an leabhar?* Whose is the book?

244. Notice in the last sentence the peculiar position of the words. The interrogative pronoun always comes first in an Irish sentence, even when it is governed by a preposition in English. In Irish we do not say "With whom (is) the book?" but "Who with him (is) the book?"

Further examples of the same construction:—

Cé leir é ro?

Whose is this?

Cé aige an leabhar?

Who has the book?

Δ Seaḡáin, otiocfaid tú go John, will you come  
ḡailim? Cao cúige? to Galway? *What*  
*for?*

Cia leir bfuil tú cormail? Whom are you like?

We may also say, Cia bfuil tú cormail leir?

Notice that the adjective *cormail*, *like*, takes *le*, *with*; not *ro*, *to*.

**245. N.B.**—The interrogative pronouns are always **nominative case** in an Irish sentence. In such a sentence as, *Cia buaileadar?* Whom did they strike? *cia* is nominative case to *ir* understood, whilst the suppressed relative is the object of *buaileadar*. In *cia leir*, *cao cúige*, &c., *leir* and *cúige* are prepositional pronouns, not simple prepositions.

### Reciprocal Pronoun.

**246.** The reciprocal pronoun in Irish is *Δ céite*,\* meaning *each other*, *one another*. *Cuir fionn Δ lámh Δ lámh Δ céite*, Finn put their hands in the hands of one another. *Do rḡar Orḡar Δḡur Diarmuid le n-Δ céite*. Oscar and Diarmuid separated from each other (lit. "separated with each other"). *Buaileadar Δ céite*. They struck each other.

---

\* Literally, his fellow.

### Phrases containing the Reciprocal Pronoun.

ó céite,\* from each other, separated or asunder.

le céite,† together.

mar n-a céite, like each other, alike.

trí n-a céite, }  
tré n-a céite, } confused, without any order.

oiréad le céite, each as much as the other.

i n-iair n-a céite, one after the other, in succession.

ar gac fárac i n-a céite, out of one desert into another

## CHAPTER V.

### THE VERB.

#### Conjugations.

247. In Irish there are two conjugations of regular verbs. They are distinguished by the formation of the future stem. All verbs of the first conjugation form the first person singular of the future simple in -*rao* or -*peao*, whilst verbs of the second conjugation form the same part in -*ócao* or -*eócao*.

\* ó céite, = ó n-a céite.

† le céite, = le n-a céite. This last form is often used and explains the aspiration in le céite



### Forms of Conjugation.

248. Every Irish verb, with the single exception of *is*, has three forms of conjugation:—The **Synthetic**, the **Analytic**, and the **Autonomous**.

249. The **synthetic, or pronominal form**, is that in which the persons are expressed by means of terminations or inflections. All the persons, singular and plural, with the single exception of the third person singular, have synthetic forms in practically every tense. The third person singular can never have its nominative contained in the verb-ending or termination.

The following example is the present tense synthetic form of the verb *mol*, *praise*:—

#### SINGULAR.

*molaim*, I praise.

*molair*, thou praisest.

*molann sé*, he praises.

#### PLURAL.

*molaimis*, we praise.

*moltaoí*, you praise.

*molair*, they praise.

250. In the **analytic form** of conjugation the persons are not expressed by inflection; the form of the verb remains the same throughout the tense and the persons are expressed by the pronouns *placed after the verb*. The form of the verb in the third person singular of the above example is the form the verb has in the analytic form of the present tense.

The analytic form in every tense has identically the same form as the third person singular of that tense.

N.B.—The analytic form is generally employed in asking questions.



The following is the analytic form of the present tense of *mol* :—

SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
<i>molaim</i> , I praise.	<i>molann rinn</i> , we praise.
<i>molann tú</i> , thou praisest.	<i>molann sib</i> , you praise.
<i>molann sé</i> , he praises.	<i>molann siad</i> , they praise

The analytic form is used in all the tenses, but in some of the tenses it is rarely, if ever, found in some of the persons: for instance, it is not found in the first person singular above. As the analytic form presents no difficulty, it will not be given in the regular table of conjugations.

251. We are indebted to the Rev. Peter O'Leary, P.P., for the following explanation of the **Autonomous Form** of conjugation :—

“This third form—*the Autonomous*—has every one of the moods and tenses, but in each tense it *has only one person*, and that person is only *implied*. It is really a personality, but it is not a specific personality. It is only a general, undefined personality.

“This third form of an Irish verb has some very unique powers. . . . I shall illustrate one. An English verb cannot of itself make complete sense alone; this form of an Irish verb can. For instance, ‘*Buailtear*’ is a complete sentence. It means, ‘A beating is being administered,’ or, ‘Somebody is striking.’ Irish grammarians have imagined that this

form of the verb is passive voice. No, it is not passive voice, for it has a passive of its own; and, again, all intransitive verbs (even the verb  $\tau\acute{\alpha}$ ) possesses this form of conjugation. The nearest equivalents in sense and use to this Irish form are the German '*mann*' and the French '*on*' with the third person singular of the verb."—*Gaelic Journal*.

The usual translation of the French phrase "*on dit*" is, "*It is said*." "*Is said*" is certainly passive voice in English, but it does not follow that "*dit*" is passive voice in French. The same remark holds with regard to the Irish phrase "*buaitear an gachán*," which is usually translated, "*The dog is struck*." *Buaitear* is not passive voice; it is *active voice, autonomous form*, and *gachán* is its object in the *accusative case*. The literal translation of the phrase is, "*Somebody strikes the dog*." The passive voice of *buaitear*, *someone strikes*, is *tátear buaite*, *someone is struck*.

252. As this is the first grammar that has adopted the term "*Autonomous form of the Verb*," we think it advisable to state that the form of the verb which we give as the *Autonomous form* is given in other Irish grammars as the *passive voice*. A fuller treatment of the *Autonomous Verb* will be found at the end of the book, where we endeavour to show that in *modern Irish*, at least, this form of the verb is *active voice*. The name by which this form of the verb ought to be called is not merely a matter of terms, for on it de-

pend the case of the following noun or pronoun : *i.e.*, whether such noun or pronoun is the *subject* or *object* of the verb.

As *all* Irish scholars have not accepted the *Autonomous form* of the verb, since it appears that formerly, at least, the verb was not *Autonomous*, being inflected for the plural number, it has been suggested that both names be retained for the present. In the first edition of this grammar the term "*Indefinite*" was given to this form, but as the name "*Autonomous*," which means *possessing the power of self government*, is far more expressive, it has been adopted instead of "*Indefinite*."

As the *Autonomous form* has only one inflection for each tense, this inflection is given immediately after each tense in the tables of conjugation.

## MOODS AND TENSES.

**253.** Verbs have three moods, the **Imperative**, the **Indicative**, and the **Subjunctive**.

Some grammars add a fourth mood, the *Conditional*; and some omit the *Subjunctive*. The *Conditional form*, however, is always either *Indicative* or *Subjunctive* in meaning, and is here classed as a tense under the *Indicative Mood*.

The **Imperative** has only one tense, the *Present*. Its use corresponds to that of the *Imperative* in English.

The **Indicative Mood** has five tenses, the *Present*, the *Imperfect*, the *Past*, the *Future*, and the *Conditional*.

The **Present Tense** corresponds to the English Present, and like it usually denotes *habitual action*.

The so-called Consuetudinal or Habitual Present—i.e., the third person singular ending in -ann—in no way differs from the other parts of the Present in regard to time. The verb bí, however, has a distinct Present, bím, denoting habitual action. In English the Present—e.g., *I write*—generally denotes habitual action. *Present action* is usually signified by a compound tense, *I am writing*. So in Irish the Present, ṙṡṙíobaim, denotes *habitual action*, and present action is denoted by the compound tense, tám aṡ ṙṡṙíobao. However, as in English, the Present Tense of certain verbs, especially those relating to the *senses* or the *mind*, denote *present* as well as *habitual action*—e.g., cluimim, *I hear*; cṙerom, *I believe*.

The **Imperfect Tense** is also called the *Habitual* or *Consuetudinal Past*. It denotes habitual action in past time; as, oo ṙṡṙíobaimn, *I used to write*.

The **Past Tense** is also called the *Perfect* and the *Preterite*. It corresponds to the Past Tense in English; as, oo ṙṡṙíobar, *I wrote*.

Continuous action in past time is denoted by a compound tense, as in English—e.g., oo bíor aṡ ṙṡṙíobao, *I was writing*.

The **Future Tense** corresponds to the Future in English: as ṙṡṙíobao, *I shall write*.

The **Conditional** corresponds to the Compound Tense with “*should*” or “*would*” in English: as oo ṙṡṙíobfá, *thou wouldst write*.

The Conditional is also called the **Secondary Future**, because it denotes a future act regarded in the past: as, aouobairt ré ṡo ṙṡṙíobfao ré. He said that he would write.

In the **Subjunctive Mood** there are only two Tenses, the Present and the Past. This mood is used principally to express a wish, and also after certain conjunctions. See par. 550, &c.

### Active Voice, Ordinary Form.

**254.** Each Tense has the following forms:—

1. The action is merely stated, as—

Buailteann Seagán an clár,  
John strikes the table.

2. The action is represented as in progress, as—

Tá Seagán ag buailt̃ an clár,  
John is striking the table.

3. The action as represented as about to happen—

Tá Seagán { cum } an clár ro buailt̃,  
                  { ar tí }  
John is about (is going) to strike the table.

4. The action is represented as completed, as—

Tá Seagán d'éir an clár ro buailt̃,  
John has just struck the table.

### Active Voice, Autonomous Form.

**255.** Each Tense has the following forms, corresponding exactly to those given in the preceding paragraph.

1. Buailtear an clár,

Someone strikes the table.

2. Τάτταρ ας βυαλαὸ ἀν ἐλάρ,  
Someone is striking the table.
3. Τάτταρ  $\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{ἐὺμ} \\ \text{ἀρ τῖ} \end{array} \right\}$  ἀν ἐλάρ το βυαλαὸ,  
Someone is about to strike the table.
4. Τάτταρ τ'έρ ἀν ἐλάρ το βυαλαὸ,  
Someone has just struck the table.

## 256. Passive Voice, Ordinary Form.

1. (This form is supplied by the Autonomous Active.)
2. Τά ἀν ἐλάρ τὰ (or ξά) βυαλαὸ,  
The table is being struck.
3. Τά ἀν ἐλάρ  $\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{ἐὺμ} \\ \text{ἀρ τῖ} \end{array} \right\}$  α βυαίτε,  
The table is about to be struck.
4. Τά ἀν ἐλάρ βυαίτε,  
The table has (just) been struck.

## 257. Passive Voice, Autonomous Form.

1. Τάτταρ βυαίτε,  
Someone is struck.
2. Τάτταρ πέ βυαλαὸ.  
Someone is being struck.
3. Τάτταρ  $\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{ἐὺμ} \\ \text{ἀρ τῖ} \end{array} \right\}$  βεῖτ βυαίτε,  
Someone is about to be struck
4. Τάτταρ βυαίτε,  
Someone has (just) been struck



**258. The Principal Parts of an Irish Verb are—**

(1) The 2nd sing. of the Imperative Mood.

(2) The 1st sing. of the Future Simple.

(3) The Past Participle (also called the Verbal Adjective).

(4) The Verbal Noun.

(a) The **Imperative 2nd. pers. sing.** gives the stem of the verb from which most of the other tenses and persons are formed.

(b) The **Future** tells to what conjugation (first or second) the verb belongs, and gives the stem for the Conditional.

(c) The **Past Participle** shows whether *τ* is aspirated or unaspirated in the following persons, which are formed from the past participle—*i.e.*:

Present, *2nd plural.*

Imperfect, *2nd singular.*

**Autonomous.**

*Imperative, Present, and Imperfect.*

Verbal noun.

*Gen. sing. and nom. plural.*

(d) With the **Verbal Noun** are formed the compound tenses.



The four following types include all verbs belonging to the first conjugation:—

## 259. Principal Parts.

Type.	Imper.	Future.	P. Participle.	Verbal Noun.	Meaning.
1.	mol	molēaō	molēta	molēaō	praise
2.	neub	neubēaō	neubēta	neubēaō	burst or tear
3.	buait	buaitēaō	buaitēte	buaitēaō	strike
4.	ῥόιρ	ῥόιρēaō	ῥόιρτε	ῥόιρτιν	help, succour

**N.B.**—No notice need be taken of the variation in form of verbal nouns, as they cannot be reduced to any rule, but must be learned for each verb. The ending αὐ or εαὐ is that most frequently found, but there are numerous other endings. (See pars. 315 and 316).

**260.** (1) and (2) are the types for all verbs of the first conjugation whose stem ends in a broad consonant; whilst (3) and (4) are the types for the verbs of the same conjugation whose stem ends in a slender consonant.

As the conjugations of types (2) and (4) are identical with those of types (1) and (3) respectively, except the aspiration of the τ in the endings mentioned in par. 258 (c), we do not think it necessary to conjugate in full the four types. We shall give the forms in modern use of the verbs mol and buait, and then give a rule which regulates the aspiration of τ in the Past Participle. (See par. 282).

## FIRST CONJUGATION.

In the following table the forms marked with an asterisk are not generally used in the analytic form. The forms in square brackets were used in early modern Irish, and are frequently met with in books. Alternative terminations are given in round brackets.

## 261. IMPERATIVE MOOD.

## SINGULAR.

1st. —

2nd. *mol*, praise thou*buaíl*, strike thou3rd. *molaid ré*, let him praise*buailead ré*

## PLURAL.

1.  $\left. \begin{array}{l} (\text{molaimir } (-\text{amuir}) \\ (\text{molam} \end{array} \right\} \begin{array}{l} \text{let us} \\ \text{praise} \end{array} \left\{ \begin{array}{l} (\text{buaílímí} (\text{eamuir}) \\ (\text{buaíteam} \end{array} \right.$

2. *molaid*, praise (you)*buaílid*

3.  $\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{molaidí}, \\ \text{moladadai}, \end{array} \right. \text{let them praise}$  *buaílidí*

## Autonomous.

*moltaí**buailtéaí*

The negative particle for this mood is *ná*.

## 262. INDICATIVE MOOD.

## Present Tense.

SING. 1. \**molaim*, I praise\**buaílím*, I strike2. *molair*, &c.*buaílir*3. *molann<sup>a</sup> ré**buaileann<sup>c</sup> ré*PLUR. 1. *molaimís* (*amuid*)*buaílímís* (*-imís*)2. *molann rí<sup>b</sup>**buaileann rí<sup>d</sup>*3. *molaid**buaílid**a[molaid]**b[moltadai]**c[buaílir]**d[buailtí]*

<b>Autonomous.</b>	Moltaṛ	buaiteṛ
<b>Relative form.</b>	Molaṛ	buaiteaṛ
<b>Negative.</b>	Ni molaṛim,	I do not praise.
„	Ni buaitiṛ,	You do not strike.
<b>Interrogative.</b>	An molaṛn ré?	Does he praise?
„	An mbuaiteṛim?	Do I strike?
<b>Neg. Interrog.</b>	Nac molaṛu?	Do they not praise?
„	Nac mbuaiteann ré?	Does he not strike?

### 263. Imperfect Tense.

<b>SING.</b>	1. *molaṛinn, I used to praise	*buaiteṛinn
	2. *moltá, &c.	*buaiteá
	3. molaṛó ré	buaiteaṛó ré
<b>PLUR.</b>	1. molaṛimíṛ (-amuiṛ)	buaiteṛimíṛ (or imuiṛ)
	2. molaṛó ríḃ	buaiteaṛó ríḃ
	3. { molaṛóir molaṛóaoir	buaiteṛóir
<b>Autonomous.</b>	Moltaoi,	buaiteí.
<b>Negative.</b>	Ni molaṛinn,	I used not praise.
„	Ni buaiteaṛó ré,	He used not strike.
<b>Interrogative.</b>	An moltá?	Used you praise?
„	An mbuaiteṛóir?	Used they strike?
<b>Neg. Interrog.</b>	Nac molaṛinn?	Used I not praise?
„	Nac mbuaiteṛinn?	Used I not strike?

### 264. Past Tense.

<b>SING.</b>	1. molaṛ, I praised	buaiteaṛ
	2. molaṛ	buaiteṛ
	3. mol ré	buaite ré

PLUR. 1. <i>molamap</i>	<i>buaiteamap</i>
2. <i>moladap</i>	<i>buaiteadap</i>
3. <i>moladap</i>	<i>buaiteadap</i>
Autonomous. <i>Molad</i>	<i>buaitad</i>
Negative. <i>ñiop molap,</i>	I did not praise.
„ <i>ñiop buait ré,</i>	He did not strike.
Interrogative. <i>Ap molap?</i>	Did you praise?
„ <i>Ap buaitap?</i>	Did I strike?
Neg. Interrog. <i>ñap mol ré?</i>	Did he not praise?
„ <i>ñap buaiteamap?</i>	Did we not strike?

### 265. Future Tense.

SING. 1. <i>molpað, I shall praise</i>	<i>buaitpeað</i>
2. <i>molpaip, thou wilt praise</i>	<i>buaitpaip</i>
3. <i>molpaio ré, &amp;c.</i>	<i>buaitpaio ré</i>
PLUR. 1. <i>molpaimio (-amuiro)</i>	<i>buaitpaimio (imio)</i>
2. <i>molpaio pib<sup>a</sup></i>	<i>buaitpaio pib<sup>b</sup></i>
3. <i>molpaio</i>	<i>buaitpaio</i>
Relative form. <i>molpap</i>	<i>buaitpeap</i>
Autonomous. <i>Molpaip<sup>c</sup></i>	<i>buaitpeap<sup>d</sup></i>
Negative. <i>ñi molpað,</i>	I shall not praise.
„ <i>ñi buaitpaio ré,</i>	He will not strike.
Interrogative. <i>An molpaio ré?</i>	Will he praise?
„ <i>An mbuaitpeað?</i>	Shall I strike?
Neg. Interrog. <i>ñac molpaip?</i>	Will you not praise?
„ <i>ñac mbuaitpaio?</i>	Will they not strike?

<sup>a</sup>[*molpaici*]  
<sup>c</sup>[*molpaioeap*]

<sup>b</sup>[*buaitpaici*]  
<sup>d</sup>[*buaitpaioeap*]

## 266. Conditional or Secondary Future.

SING. 1.	mōlpaínn, I would praise	buaítpínn
2.	mōlpá	buaítpeá
3.	mōlpaò ré	buaítpeaò ré
PLUR. 1.	mōlpaímír (pamuir)	buaítpímír (pímír)
2.	mōlpaò ríð	buaítpeaò ríð
3.	{ mōlpaíóir mōlpaòaoir	buaítpíóir
Autonomous.	mōlpaí	buaítpí
Negative.	Ní mōlpaínn,	I would not praise.
"	Ní buaítpeá,	You would not strike
Interrogative.	An mōlpá,	Would you praise?
"	An mbuaítpeaò ré,	Would he strike?
Neg. Interrog.	Nac mōlpaò ré?	Would he not praise?
"	Nac mbuaítpímír?	Would we not strike?

## SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

## 267. Present Tense.

SING. 1.	mōlaò	buaíteaò
2.	mōlaip	buaítip
3.	mōlaíò ré	buaítíò ré
PLUR. 1.	mōlaímíò (-amuir)	buaítímíò (-ímíò)
2.	mōlaíò ríð <sup>a</sup>	buaítíò ríð <sup>b</sup>
3.	mōlaíò	buaítíò
Autonomous.	mōlteap	buaíteap

The negative particle is *nár*, which always aspirates when possible.

268.

## Past Tense.

SING. 1. <i>molaimn</i>	<i>buailinn</i>
2. <i>molta</i>	<i>buailtea</i>
3. <i>molao ré</i>	<i>buaileao ré</i>
PLUR. 1. <i>molaimir</i> ( <i>amuir</i> )	<i>buailimir</i> ( <i>-imir</i> )
2. <i>molao rib</i>	<i>buaileao rib</i>
3. { <i>molair</i> <i>molaoair</i>	<i>buailir</i>
Autonomous. <i>moltaoi</i>	<i>buailei</i>
Verbal Noun. <i>molao</i>	<i>buaileo</i>
Verbal Adj. <i>molta</i>	<i>buaile</i>

## NOTES ON THE MOODS AND TENSES.

## The Present Tenses.

269. The Present Tense is always formed by adding *aim*, *air*, &c., to the stem when the last vowel is broad; if the last vowel is slender add *im*, *ir*, *eann*, &c. The last syllable of the first person plural is often pronounced rapidly—*e.g.*, *molamuir* (*mul'-a-mwid*), *cperimuir* (*k'red'imid*); but in the South of Ireland this syllable is lengthened, *molaimir* (*mul'-a-meed*), *cperimir* (*k'red'-imeed*). Verbs of more than one syllable ending in *is* add *mir*, not *imir*, in the first person plural of this tense.

270. In Ulster the ending *mir* of the first person plural is very often separated from the verb, and used instead of the pronoun *inn* as *Connaic mir é*. We saw him; *Connaic ré mir*. He saw us. On no account should this corruption be imitated by the student.



271. The *old* form of the third person singular ended in *arō* or *rō*, and the analytic forms *found in books*, and sometimes in the northern dialect, are got from this form: as *molarō rinn*, we praise.

272. The analytic form is not usually found in the first person singular of this tense, nor is the synthetic form often used in the second person plural.

### The Imperfect Tense.

273. The initial consonant of this tense is usually aspirated in the active voice, when possible.

The termination *arō* or *earō* in the 3rd sing. of this tense, as also in the Imperative and Conditional, is pronounced *ac̃*, or *am̃*.

274. When none of the particles *ní*, *an*, *nač*, &c., precede the Imperfect Tense, *ro* may be used before it. This *ro* may be omitted except when the verb begins with a vowel or *p*. The compound particles, *níor*, *ar*, *nár*, *sur*, *cár*, &c., can *never* be used with the Imperfect Tense.

275. Whenever the word "*would*" is used in English to describe what used to take place, the Imperfect Tense, not the Conditional, is used in Irish, as—

He *would* often say to me. *Ir m̃imic ãveinearō ré uim̃.*

### The Past Tense.

276. In the Past Tense active voice the initial consonant of the verb is aspirated. The remark which

has just been made with regard to the use of *ro* before the Imperfect Tense applies also to the Past Tense.

In the Autonomous form *ro* does not aspirate, but prefixes *n* to vowels.

277. With the exception of the aspiration of the initial consonant, the third person singular of this tense is exactly the same as the second person singular of the Imperative (*i.e.*, the stem of the verb).

278. The particle formerly used before the Past Tense was *po*. It is now no longer used by itself, but it occurs in combination with other particles.

The most important of these compounds are:—

- |  |  |
|--|--|
| (1) <i>Δη</i> , whether ( <i>Δη + po</i> ).      | <i>Δη βυαιτρε?</i> Did he strike?                              |
| (2) <i>Ση</i> , that ( <i>Ση + po</i> ).         | <i>Οειη ρε ση βυαιταρ ε.</i><br>He says that I struck him.     |
| (3) <i>Οαη</i> , where ( <i>Οαη + po</i> ).      | <i>Οαη οεαννυγιη αν οαπαυ?</i><br>Where did you buy the horse? |
| (4) <i>Μηνη</i> , unless ( <i>μνη + po</i> ).    | <i>Μηνη βυαιτ ρε</i> , unless he struck.                       |
| (5) <i>Νηοη</i> , not ( <i>νι + po</i> ).        | <i>Νηοη οπειρο ρε.</i> He did not believe.                     |
| (6) <i>Ναη</i> or <i>ναοαη</i> , whether ...not. | <i>Ναη οπειρο ρε?</i> Did he not believe?                      |

- (7) **Óár, to whom (to, to +** **Δ + πο).** **Δn fear óár gaeallar mo**  
**leabhar. The man to**  
**whom I promised my**  
**book.**
- (8) **le, by or with which** **Δn maroe le, buasteaó é,**  
**(le + Δ + πο).** **The stick with which**  
**they beat him (or he**  
**was beaten).**

**279. The compounds of πο aspirate.** These compounds are used with the Past Tense of all verbs except the following:—**fuab, was; tug, gave or brought; fu, bore; fada, saw; tainis, came; fuair, found, got; deachao, went; deárna, made or did.**

The compounds of πο are used in some places before **tug** and **tainis**.

**N.B.**—**Deachao** and **deárna** are used instead of **cuao** and **pinne** after negative and interrogative particles. Instead of **deachao** and **deárna**, **cuao** and **dein** (**óin**) are used in Munster.

### **The Future Tense and Conditional.**

**280.** All the inflections of the Future and Conditional in the first conjugation begin with the letter **f**, which in the spoken language is generally pronounced like "h." This "h" sound combines with the letters **b, v** and **s** (whenever the stem ends in these) changing them in sound into **p, t, c**, respectively.

κρητορεαο is usually pronounced k'ret'-udh  
 φαζεφαο „ „ fau'-kudh  
 ρηριοβρεαο „ „ shgree-pudh

**N.B.**—ρ is sounded in the second sing. Conditional active and in the Autonomous form.

281. The particle οο, causing aspiration, may be used before the Conditional when no other particle precedes it.

Note that the terminations of the Imperative Mood, the Imperfect Tense, and the Conditional are almost the same, excepting the letter ρ of the latter.

#### Rule for the Aspiration of τ of Past Participles.

282. The τ of the past participle is generally aspirated except after the letters ο, η, τ, ι, σ, ς, ϕ, Ϸ, and (*in verbs of one syllable*) ζ.

There is a great tendency in the spoken language *not* to aspirate the τ in all verb inflexions after consonants: *e.g.*, τυστα, τυσταρ, ρειρτεαρ, etc.

283. This participle cannot be used like the English participle to express action. *He was praised* is generally μοταο ε; very seldom βι ρε μοτα. *The Irish participle has always the force of an adjective* denoting the complete state, never the force of an action in progress.

284. After ιρ the Past Participle denotes what is proper or necessary: as, ηι μοτα ουιτ ε. *He is not to be praised by you.* This form, called the **Participle of Necessity**, should probably be regarded as distinct

from the ordinary past participle, as it may occur in verbs which have no past participle, *e.g.* :—

“Ír deimhin nađ bfuil duine nađ beirte dó ar coméad orm.” “It is certain that there is no person *who will not have to be* on his guard against me.” (Letter of Seán Ó Néill, 1561.) “Tuigtear ar an rgeul, nađ beirte do nead dul i n-euodcar.” It may hence be learned that *it is not proper* for anyone to fall into despair. ní beirte ag a feunad (or simply, ní feunta). It must not be denied. Here beirte is the *Participle of Necessity* of the verb bí.

### 285. Derivative Participles.

ion-molta	in-peubta	ion-buailte	ion-fóirte
ro-molta	ro-peubta	ro-buailte	ro-fóirte
do-molta	do-peubta	do-buailte	do-fóirte

286. The prefix ion- or in- denotes *what is proper or fit to be done*: as ion-molta, fit to be praised, deserving of praise.

The prefix ro- denotes *what is possible or easy to do*: as ro-peubta, capable of being burst, easy to burst.

287. The prefix do- denotes *what is impossible or difficult to do*: as do-buailte, incapable of being struck, hard to strike.

288. These derivative participles seem to be formed rather from *the genitive of the verbal noun* than from the participle: as fağail, finding,

ro-fağaila, easily found. do-fağaila, hard to find.

## 289. Declension of Verbal Noun.

		SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
Nom.	}	molatō	molta
Acc.			
Gen.		molta	molatō (molta)
Dat.		molatō	moltaib
Nom.	}	bualatō	bualte
Acc.			
Gen.		bualte	bualatō (bualte)
Dat.		bualatō	bualtib

290. Many verbal nouns are seldom or never used in the plural. As a rule the genitive singular of the verbal noun is identical in form with the past participle; but many verbal nouns are declined like ordinary nouns: nearly all those ending in *aēt*, *āt*, and *amain* belong to the 3rd declension—*e.g.*, *ḡabāt*, act of taking; gen., *ḡabāta*: *ṛēt*, running; gen. *ṛeatā*: *teanāmain*, act of following; gen. *teanāmna*: *ṛiubat*, act or walking; gen. *ṛiubat*: *ṛār*, act of growing; gen. *ṛār*, &c.

## SECOND CONJUGATION.

291. The second conjugation comprises two classes of verbs—(1) **derived verbs** in *iḡ* or *uiḡ*; and (2) **syncopated verbs**.



**292. Syncopated verbs** are those in which the vowel in the final syllable of the stem is omitted when any termination *commencing with a vowel* is added: as **ԼԵԾԱՐ**, *speak*; **ԼԵԾԱՐԱՅՄ** (not **ԼԵԾԱՐԱՅՄԻՄ**), *I speak*. **Verbs of more than one syllable whose stem ends in յ, ն, ր, ր, ւոց, belong to this class.**

### VERBS IN ԻՅ (-ւոց).

#### 293. Principal Parts.

Type.	Imper.	Future.	Past Participle.	V. Noun.	Meaning.
1.	<b>ԵԱՅ</b>	<b>ԵԱՅԵՐԱՅ</b>	<b>ԵԱՅԻՇԵ</b>	<b>ԵԱՅԱՅԱՅ</b>	gather
2.	<b>ԵԱՅՈՒՅ</b>	<b>ԵԱՅՈՐԵՐԱՅ</b>	<b>ԵԱՅՈՒՇԵ</b>	<b>ԵԱՅՈՒՅ</b>	buy

**294.** Except in the *Future* and *Conditional*, all verbs in **ից** and **ւոց** are conjugated like **ԵԱՅ** (first conjugation), except that the **ւ** is aspirated in all terminations beginning with that letter. It is, therefore, necessary to give only the *Future* and *Conditional* in full.

#### 295. Future.

##### SINGULAR.

- |                                     |                                |
|-------------------------------------|--------------------------------|
| 1. <b>ԵԱՅԵՐԱՅ</b> , I shall gather. | <b>ԵԱՅՈՐԵՐԱՅ</b> , I shall buy |
| 2. <b>ԵԱՅԵՐԱՅԻ,</b>                 | <b>ԵԱՅՈՐԵՐԱՅԻ.</b>             |
| 3. <b>ԵԱՅԵՐԱՅԻՐԵ,</b>               | <b>ԵԱՅՈՐԵՐԱՅԻՐԵ.</b>           |

##### PLURAL.

- |                                  |                                 |
|----------------------------------|---------------------------------|
| 1. <b>ԵԱՅԵՐԱՅԻՄ</b><br>(-ճԱՄԻՐ), | <b>ԵԱՅՈՐԵՐԱՅԻՄ</b><br>(-ճԱՄԻՐ). |
| 2. <b>ԵԱՅԵՐԱՅԻՐԵՐ,</b>           | <b>ԵԱՅՈՐԵՐԱՅԻՐԵՐ.</b>           |
| 3. <b>ԵԱՅԵՐԱՅԻՐԵՐ,</b>           | <b>ԵԱՅՈՐԵՐԱՅԻՐԵՐ.</b>           |

**Relative.** **ԵԱՅԵՐԱՅԻ.** **ԵԱՅՈՐԵՐԱՅԻ.**

**Autonomous.** **ԵԱՅԵՐԱՅԻՐԵ.** **ԵԱՅՈՐԵՐԱՅԻՐԵ.**

296.

**Conditional.****SINGULAR.**

- |                                  |               |
|----------------------------------|---------------|
| 1. b̃aileócaimn, I would gather. | ceannócaimn.  |
| 2. b̃aileóctá,                   | ceannóctá.    |
| 3. b̃aileócaó ré,                | ceannócaó ré. |

**PLURAL.**

- |                                      |                                 |
|--------------------------------------|---------------------------------|
| 1. b̃aileócaim̃ir<br>(-amuir)        | ceannócaim̃ir<br>(-amuir).      |
| 2. b̃aileócaó r̃ib̃,                 | ceannócaó r̃ib̃.                |
| 3. { b̃aileócaioir<br>b̃aileócaoaoir | { ceannócaioir<br>ceannócaoaoir |

**Autonomous.** b̃aileóctáí

ceannóctáí

297. In early modern usage, when the stem ended in -uig̃, preceded by o, n, t, l, or r, these consonants were usually attenuated in the Future and Conditional: as áir̃uig̃, *raise*, future áir̃ueócaó; r̃al̃uig̃, *soil*, future r̃aileócaó; but nowadays áir̃uócaó, r̃alócaó, &c., are the forms used.

**Syncopated Verbs.**

298. The personal endings of syncopated verbs vary somewhat according as the *consonant commencing* the last syllable of the stem is broad or slender.

Type (1). Stems in which the last syllable *commences with a broad consonant*,\* as r̃uaḡair̃ (r̃óḡair̃), *proclaim*.

Type (2). Stems in which the last syllable *commences with a slender consonant*, as coig̃il, *spare*.

---

\* A few of these take te in past participle; as oḡail, *open*, oḡailte; ceangail, *bind*, ceangailte. The parts of these verbs [258 c.] which are formed from the past participle will, of course, have slender terminations. e.g., o'ḡailteá, *you used to open*.

299 In early modern usage the Future is formed by lengthening the vowel sound of the last syllable of the stem from *αι* or *ι* to *εό*. In the case of Type 1 the broad consonant which commences the final syllable of the stem must be made slender. Examples: *ινηιρ*, *inneorao*, *I shall tell*; *οιβιρ*, *οibeoraiρ*, *you will banish*; *ιμυιρ*, *imeoraiο* *ré*, *he will play*; *κοιγιλ*, *coigeolaο*, *I shall spare*; *φυαζαιρ*, *φυαζεοραιο*, *they will proclaim*; *ο'φυαζεοραιο* *ré*, *he would proclaim*; *κοοαιλ*, *coioeolaο*, *I shall sleep*; *κοοεολαιν*, *I would sleep*.

300. In the present-day usage the Future stem is formed as if the verb ended in *ις* or *υις*: by adding *-οε* in Type 1 and *-εοε* in Type 2.

### 301. Principal Parts.

	Imperative.	Future.	Participle.	V. Noun.
Type (1).	<i>φυαζαιρ</i>	<i>φυαζηοεοαο</i>	<i>φυαζαρτα</i>	<i>φυαζηα(ο)</i>

### 302.

Type (2).	<i>κοιγιλ</i>	<i>κοιγλεοεοαο</i>	<i>κοιγιλτε</i>	<i>κοιγιλτε</i>
-----------	---------------	--------------------	-----------------	-----------------

### 303. IMPERATIVE MOOD.

SING. 1.	—	—
2.	<i>φυαζαιρ</i> , proclaim	<i>κοιγιλ</i> , spare
3.	<i>φυαζηαο</i> <i>ré</i>	<i>κοιγλεαο</i> <i>ré</i>
PLUR. 1.	<i>φυαζηαιμιρ</i>	<i>κοιγλιμιρ</i>
2.	<i>φυαζηαιο</i>	<i>κοιγλιο</i>
3.	<i>φυαζηαιοιρ</i> ( <i>-αοαοιρ</i> )	<i>κοιγλιοιρ</i>
Autonomous.	<i>φυαζαρταρ</i>	<i>κοιγιλτεαρ</i>

## INDICATIVE MOOD.

## 304. Present Tense.

SING. 1.	fuasraim, I proclaim	coislim, I spare
2.	fuasrair	coisliu
3.	fuasraíonn ré <sup>a</sup>	coisleann <sup>c</sup> ré <sup>d</sup>
PLUR. 1.	fuasraimid	coislimid
2.	fuasraíonn sib <sup>b</sup>	coisleann sib <sup>d</sup>
3.	fuasraíod	coisliod
Relative.	fuasrair	coislear
Autonomous.	fuasraítear	coisiltear

## 305. Imperfect Tense.

SING. 1.	o'fuasraínn	coislinn
2.	o'fuasraíod	coisilteod
3.	o'fuasraíod ré	coisleaod ré
PLUR. 1.	o'fuasraímid	coislimid
2.	o'fuasraíod sib	coisleaod sib
3.	o'fuasraíodir (-daoir)	coisliodir
Autonomous.	fuasraíteadai	coisilci

## 306. Past Tense.

SING. 1.	o'fuasrair	coislear
2.	o'fuasrair	coisliu
3.	o'fuasrair ré	coisil ré
PLUR. 1.	o'fuasraímar	coisleamar
2.	o'fuasraíodar	coisleaodar
3.	o'fuasraíodar	coisleaodar
Autonomous.	fuasraíod	coisleaod

307.

**Future Tense.****SINGULAR.**

1. fuasprocað	coigleócað
2. fuasprocair	coigleócair
3. fuasprocair þé	coigleócair þé

**PLURAL.**

1. fuasprocaimíð	coigleócaimíð
2. fuasprocair þið	coigleócair þið
3. fuasprocaio	coigleócaio

**Relative Form.** fuasprocar      coigleócar

**Autonomous.** fuasproccar      coigleóccar

308.

**Conditional.**

SING. 1. o'fuasprocainn	coigleócainn
2. o'fuasproccá	coigleóccá
3. o'fuasprocað þé	coigleócað þé
PLUR. 1. o'fuasprocaimír	coigleócaimír
2. o'fuasprocað þið	coigleócað þið
3. o'fuasprocaioir	coigleócaioir

**Autonomous.** fuasproccai      coigleóccai

309.

**SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.****Present Tense.**

SING. 1. fuasprað	coigleað
2. fuasprair	coiglair
3. fuaspraio þé	coiglið þé
PLUR. 1. fuaspraímíð	coiglimíð
2. fuaspraio þið	coiglið þið
3. fuaspraio	coiglio

**Autonomous.** fuaspraccar      coigiltear

**310. Past Tense.**

SING. 1.	բաճարաւոյն	օճիլոյն
2.	բաճարեձ	օճիլեձ
3.	բաճարած թէ	օճիլեած թէ
PLUR. 1.	բաճարաւոյր	օճիլոյր
2.	բաճարած րիծ	օճիլեած րիծ
3.	բաճարաւոյր	օճիլոյր
Autonomous,	բաճարեալ	օճիլեալ

**311. Past Participle and Participle of Necessity.**

բաճարեա	օճիլե
---------	-------

**312. Compound Participles.**

յոն-բաճարեա	յոն-օճիլե
րօ-բաճարեա	րօ-օճիլե
ոօ-բաճարեա	ոօ-օճիլե

**313. Verbal Nouns.**

	SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
NOM. }	բաճար(ո) (բաճարե) բաճարեա	բաճար(ո) (բաճարեա)
ACC. }		
GEN.	բաճարեա	բաճար(ո) (բաճարեա)
DAT.	բաճար(ո) (բաճարե) բաճարեալ	
NOM. }	օճիլե	—
ACC. }		
GEN.	օճիլե	—
DAT.	օճիլե	—

314. In stems of Type (2) ending in *ր*, the Participle is usually in the form *արեա*, not *րե*, as *ճիլ*, *banish*: *ճիլարեա*, *banished*; *լիլ*, *play*; *լիլարեա*, *played*.

The endings formed on the participle [see par. 258 c.] follow this change, *e.g.*, Imperfect 2nd singular, *ճիլարեձ*; Present Auton., *ճիլարեալ*, &c.



### 318. General Rules for the formation of Verbal Noun.

(a) As a general rule verbs of the first conjugation form their verbal noun in  $\Delta\theta$ , if the final consonant of the stem be broad; in  $\epsilon\Delta\theta$ , if it be slender, as—

$\tau\acute{o}\nu$ , shut	$\tau\acute{o}\nu\alpha\Delta\theta$
$\mu\acute{\iota}\tau\tau$ , destroy	$\mu\acute{\iota}\tau\tau\epsilon\Delta\theta$
$\mu\omicron\tau$ , praise	$\mu\omicron\tau\epsilon\Delta\theta$
$\lambda\epsilon\acute{\iota}\xi$ , read	$\lambda\epsilon\acute{\iota}\xi\epsilon\Delta\theta$ .

(b) When the last vowel of the stem is  $\iota$  preceded by a broad vowel, the  $\iota$  is *usually* dropped in the formation of the verbal noun, as—

$\beta\upsilon\alpha\iota\iota$ , strike	$\beta\upsilon\alpha\iota\Delta\theta$
$\tau\omicron\acute{\omicron}\xi$ , burn	$\tau\omicron\acute{\omicron}\xi\Delta\theta$
$\xi\omicron\iota\iota$ , wound	$\xi\omicron\iota\Delta\theta$
$\beta\eta\acute{\upsilon}\iota\xi$ , bruise	$\beta\eta\acute{\upsilon}\xi\Delta\theta$

The  $\iota$  is not dropped in—

$\epsilon\Delta\omicron\iota\iota$ , lament	$\epsilon\Delta\omicron\iota\epsilon\Delta\theta$
$\rho\tilde{\xi}\Delta\omicron\iota\iota$ , loose	$\rho\tilde{\xi}\Delta\omicron\iota\epsilon\Delta\theta$
$\rho\mu\upsilon\alpha\iota\iota$ , reflect	$\rho\mu\upsilon\alpha\iota\epsilon\Delta\theta$

(c) Verbs of the second conjugation ending in  $\iota\iota$ ,  $\iota\tau$  or  $\iota\pi$  generally form their verbal noun by adding  $\tau$ , as—

$\tau\acute{\omicron}\beta\iota\iota\pi$ , banish	$\tau\acute{\omicron}\beta\iota\iota\pi\tau$
$\kappa\omicron\pi\alpha\iota\iota$ , defend	$\kappa\omicron\pi\alpha\iota\iota\tau$ ( $\kappa\omicron\pi\alpha\iota\iota\mu$ )
$\lambda\alpha\beta\alpha\iota\iota$ , speak	$\lambda\alpha\beta\alpha\iota\iota\tau$
$\kappa\omicron\iota\tilde{\xi}\iota\iota$ , spare	$\kappa\omicron\iota\tilde{\xi}\iota\iota\tau$

(d) Derived verbs ending in *uis* form their verbal noun by dropping the *i* and adding *ad*; as, *áirúis*, *raise*, *áirúisad*.

(e) Derived verbs in *is* form their verbal noun by inserting *u* between the *i* and *s* and then adding *ad*; as *mínis*, *explain*, *míniúisad*.

316. There are, however, many exceptions to the above rules. The following classification of the modes of forming the verbal noun will be useful.

(a) Some verbs have their verbal noun like the stem, *e.g.*, *ḡár*, *grow*; *ól*, *drink*; *ḡit*, *run*; *ḡnám*, *swim*, &c.

(b) Some verbs form their verbal noun by dropping *i* of the stem, *e.g.*, *cuir*, *put or send*, *cúr*; *coirḡ*, *check*, *corḡ*; *rḡuir*, *cease*, *rḡur*; *ḡuit*, *weep*, *ḡut*, &c.

(c) Some verbs add *amain* or *eamain* to the stem to form their verbal noun, *e.g.*, *caill*, *lose*, *cailleamain(τ)*; *cḡero*, *believe*, *cḡeroeamain(τ)*; *ḡan*, *stay*, *ḡanamain(τ)*, *lean*, *follow*, *leanamain(τ)*; *rḡar*, *separate*, *rḡaramain(τ)*, &c.

In the spoken language *τ* is usually added to the classical termination *-amain*.

(d) A few add *an* or *ean* for the verbal noun, *e.g.*, *leas*, *knock down*, *leasan*; *léis*, *let or permit*, *léisean*; *tréis*, *abandon*, *tréisean*; *teilḡ*, *throw or cast*, *teilgean*.

(e) A few add *am* or *eam*, e.g., *feap*, stand, *feapam*; *cait*, spend, consume, *caiteam*; *veun*, do or make, *veunam* (or *veunao*); *feit*, wait, *feiteam*.

(f) A small number end in *ail* or *gail*, as *gab*, take, *gabail*; *fas*, find, *fasgail*; *fas*, leave, *fasgail*; *feo*, whistle, *feogail*.

A fairly full list of irregular verbal nouns is given in Appendix V.

## IRREGULAR VERBS.

317. In Old and Middle Irish the conjugation of verbs was very complex, but by degrees the varieties of conjugations became fewer, and nearly all verbs came to be conjugated in the same way. At the commencement of the modern period (*i.e.*, about the end of the sixteenth century) about fifteen verbs in common use retained their old forms. These are now classed as irregular. Excepting occasional survivals of older forms, all the other verbs had by this time become regular; so that from the stem of the verb it was possible in nearly every instance to tell all its forms except the *verbal noun*.

During the modern period even the irregular verbs have, through the operation of analogy, shown a tendency to adopt the forms of the modern regular conjugations.

### *taim*, I AM.

318. The correct spelling of this verb is undoubtedly *ataim*, but long since it has lost its initial *a*, except when it occurs in the middle of a sentence, where it usually has a relative force. Some persons, by confounding this initial *a*, which really belongs to the verb, with the modern relative particle *a*, write the *a* separated from the *ta*: as *a ta* instead of *ata*.

## IMPERATIVE MOOD.

319. — bímír, let us be  
 bí, be thou bíóir, let you be  
 bíóð ré, let him be bíóir. let them be

Autonomous, bítear.

The negative particle is ná.

All the persons, except the 2nd sing., are often written as if formed from the spurious stem bíð: *e.g.*, bíðeasó ré.

## INDICATIVE MOOD.

320. Present Tense—Absolute.

## SYNTHETIC FORM.

SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
τάim, I am	τάimio, we are
τάir, * thou art	τά rið, τάταoi, you are
τά ré, he is	τάio, they are

Autonomous, τάταr.

## Present Tense (Analytic Form).

τά mé, I am	τά rinu, we are
τά tú, thou art	τά rið, you are
τά ré, he is	τά riad, they are

321. Present Tense—Dependent.

fuilim	fuilmio
fuilir	fuil rið
fuil ré	fuilio

Autonomous, fuiltear.

---

\* The early modern form, viz., ταoi, is still used in Munster, *e.g.*, Cionnur ταoi? (or Cionnur ταoi'n tú?) *How are you?*

Negatively.	Interrogatively.	Neg. Interrog
I am not, &c.	Am I, &c.	Am I not, &c.
ní fhuilim	an bhfuilim	naé bhfuilim
ní fhuilir	an bhfuilir	naé bhfuilir
ní fhuil ré	an bhfuil ré	naé bhfuil ré
ní fhuilmíó	an bhfuilmíó	naé bhfuilmíó
ní fhuil ríó	an bhfuil ríó	naé bhfuil ríó
ní fhuiliró	an bhfuiliró	naé bhfuiliró

The analytic forms are like those given above; as,  
ní fhuil ríadó, naé bhfuil tú, &c.

### 322. Habitual Present.

SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
bím (bíóim)	bímíó (bíóimíó)
bír (bíóir)	bíonn ríó, bící
bíonn ré (bíó ré, bíóeann ré)	bíó (bíóiró)

Negatively, ní bím, &c. Interrogatively, an mbím, &c.

Neg. Interrog., naé mbím, &c.

Relative form bíor (bíóear).

Autonomous, bícear

### 323. Imperfect Tense (*I used to be*).

SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
do bínn (do bíóinn)	do bímír (bíóimír)
„ bíceá ( „ bíóceá)	„ bíóó ríó
„ bíóó ré ( „ bíóeadó ré)	„ bíóír (bíóóir)
Autonomous,	bící
Negatively,	ní bínn
Interrogatively,	an mbínn?
Neg. interrog.	naé mbínn?

324.

## Past Tense.

## ABSOLUTE.

do bïor (bïðear)

do bïomar (bïðeamar)

,, bïr (bïðir)

,, bïoðar (bïðeaðar)

,, bï ré

,, bïoðar, bïðeaðar

## Autonomous, bïðear

325.

## DEPENDENT.

raðar

raðamar

raðair

raðaðar

raib ré

raðaðar

## Autonomous, raððar

Negative, ní raðar, ní raðair, ní raib ré, &amp;c.

Interrogatively (*Was I? &c.*).

an raðar an raðair an raib ré an raðamar, &amp;c.

Neg. interrog. (*Was I not? &c.*).

nac raðar

nac raðair

nac raib ré, &amp;c.

326.

## Future Tense.

## SINGULAR.

## PLURAL.

béað, beað (béiðeað)

béimio, beimio (béiðimio)

béir, beiri (béiðir)

béio rið, béiðí

béio, beio ré

béio, beio (béiðio)

## Relative Form,

bea, bea (béiðea)

## Autonomous,

béiðear, beipear

## Negatively,

ní béað

## Interrog.,

an mbéað?

## Neg. Interrog.,

nac mbéað?



## 327. Secondary Future or Conditional.

do béinn (béirínn)	béimír (béirímír)
„ béiteá (béiríteá)	béad, bead (béiríad) ríð
„ béad, bead (béiríad) ré	béirí (béiríí)

Autonomous,	beríí, béirí
Negative,	ní béinn
Interrog.,	an mbéinn
Neg. interrog.,	nac mbéinn

## 328. THE SUBJUNCTIVE.

## Present Tense.

so raðad	so raðmuir
so raðair	so raib ríð (raibíad)
so raib ré	so raibí

The negative particle for this tense is **na**: as, **na raib maic agat**. No thanks to you.

## 329. Past Tense.

so mbínn	so mbímír
so mbíteá	so mbíad ríð
so mbíad ré	so mbíí

The negative particle is **na**.

## Autonomous Form.

so raibíar!	may (they) be! (for once).
so mbítear!	„ „ (generally).

## Verbal Noun.

beir, to be.

## 330. Phrases containing the Verb Noun.

Ir féidir liom (a)* beir	I can be, &c.
Ní féidir liom (a) beir	I cannot be, &c.
Tu leat (a) beir	You can be, &c.
Ní tu leat (a) beir	You cannot be, &c.
Caitir ré beir	He must be, &c.
Caitir mé beir	I must be, &c.
Ní fulaig go raib tú	You must have been, &c.
Ir corraíl go raib tú	
Níor b'féidir nó bí tú	
Ní corraíl go raib mé	I must not have been, &c.
Ní fulaig naé raib mé	
Ir cóir dom (a) beir	I ought to be.
Ní cóir duit (a) beir	You ought not to be.
Duró cóir dó beir	He ought to have been.
Níor cóir dom (a) beir	I ought not to have been.
Duró mair liom (a) beir ann	I wish I were there.
Ba mair liom go raib mé	I wish I had been there.
ann	
Tá ré le beir ann	He is to be there.

331. The forms *fuilim* and *faodar* are used—

(1) After the particles *ní*, not; *cá*, where? *an* (or *a*), whether? *go*, that; and *naé* or *ná*, that (conj.)...not.

\* This *a* is usually heard in the spoken language

(2) After the relative particle *a*, when it is preceded by a preposition, after the relative *a* when it means "what," "all that," "all which," and after the negative relative *nač*, who...not, which...not. *Cá b-fuit ré?* Where is it? *Ní fuit a fíor aḡam.* I don't know. *Cá fíor aḡam ná fuit ré ann.* I know it is not there. *Deir ré go b-fuit ré rían.* He says that he is well. *Sin é an fear nač b-fuit aḡ obair.* That is the man who is not working. *Dubairt ré uíom nač páirb ré ann.* He told me he was not there.

332. We sometimes find the verb *fuit* eclipsed after the negative *ní*, not; as, *ní b-fuit ré* he is not

For the use of the Relative Form refer to pars. 554-560.

### THE ASSERTIVE VERB IS.

333. The position of a verb in an Irish sentence is at the very beginning; hence, when a word other than the verb is to be brought into prominence, the important word is to be placed in the most prominent position—viz., at the beginning of the sentence, under cover of an *unemphatic impersonal verb*. There is no stress on the verb so used; it merely denotes that prominence is given to some idea in the sentence other than that contained in the verb. There is a similar expedient adopted in English: thus, "He was speaking of you," and, "It

is of you he was speaking." In Irish there is a special verb for this purpose, and of this verb there are forms to be used in principal clauses and forms to be used in dependent clauses—*e.g.*:

Ir m<sup>i</sup>re an fear. I am the man. '

Deirim gur ab é Seagán an fear. I say John is the man.

### 334. Forms of the Assertive Verb.

#### (a) *In Principal Sentences.*

Present Tense, ir. Relative, ir or ar.

Past Tense, ba.

[Future Simple, buò. Relative, bur].

Secondary Future or Conditional, baò.

Subjunctive, ab; sometimes ba.

Subjunc. Pres. (*with* so) so mba, surab; (*with* ná) nárab, nára.

Subjunc. Past. óa mbaò, "if it were."

### 335. Present Tense.

ir mé, I am; or, it is I.

ir rinn, we are, it is we.

ir tú, thou art, it is you.

ir rib, you are, it is you.

ir é, he is, it is he.

ir iad, they are, it is they.

ir í, she is, it is she.

### 336.

#### Past Tense.

ba mé,

I was, it was I.

ba tú,

thou wast, &c.

ob' é, b' é, ba n-é,

he was, &c.

ob' í, b' í, ba n-í

she was, &c.

ba rinn,

we were, &c.

ba rib,

you were, &c.

ob' iad, b' iad, ba n-iad

they were, &c.

*Dur* or *bur* is never used in the spoken language, and scarcely ever in writing, except when a superlative adjective or adverb occurs in a sentence, the verbs of which are in the Future Tense.

**337. In the Present Tense the verb *is* is omitted after all particles except *mā*, if:** as, *ir mé an fear*. I am the man; *ní mé an fear*. I am not the man.

**338. In the Past Tense *ba* is usually omitted after particles when the word following *ba* begins with a consonant:** as, *Ar maic leat an áit?* Did you like the place? *Nár beag an tuac é?* Was it not a small price? *Ba* is not usually omitted when the following word begins with a vowel or *f*, but the *a* is elided: as, *Níor b' é rin an rí*. That was not the priest. Notice that the word immediately after *ba* or *ba*, even when *ba* or *ba* is understood, is usually aspirated when possible.

*(b) In Dependent Sentences.*

**339. Present Tense.**—*ab* is used instead of *ir* after *sup*, meaning “that”; as, *meaíam supab é rin an fear*. I think that is the man. Before a consonant *ab* is usually omitted; as, *deir ré sup mire an fear*. He says that I am the man. *Ab* is always omitted after *na*, that...not. *Saoíim na é rin an rí*. I think that is not the king.

**340. Past Tense.**—The word *ba* or *ba* becomes *b'* in dependent sentences and is usually joined to the

particle which precedes it. When the following word begins with a consonant the *u'* is usually omitted. *Meapaim supb'é reo an teac.* I think that this was the house; *meapann ré nár máit le Niall beir annro.* He thinks that Niall did not like to be here. *An meapann tú sup máit an rgeut é?* Do you think that it was a good story?

**341. Conditional.**—In dependent sentences *ba* or *baó* becomes *mba*. *Saoilim go mba máit leir out teac.* I think he would like to go with you. *Deir ré nac mba máit leir.* He says that he would not like. In the spoken language the tendency is to use the past tense forms in dependent sentences; hence Irish speakers would say *sup máit* in the above sentence instead of *go mba máit*, and *nár máit* instead of *nac mba máit*.

The *Future* is never used in dependent sentences in the spoken language.

## BEIR, BEAR or CARRY.

### 342. Principal Parts.

Imperative.	Future.	Participle.	Verbal Noun.
beir	beirfao	beirte	bpeit

This verb is conjugated like *buait*, except in the Past, Future and Conditional.

### 343. Past Tense.

*ruḡar, ruḡair, &c.*, like *motar* (par. 264).

The prefixes *ro* and *ri* were not used before this Past Tense in early usage and not generally in present-day usage.





## INDICATIVE MOOD.

## 347. Present Tense.

	ABSOLUTE.	DEPENDENT.
SING. 1.	(ṽo-) beipim	ταῖραιμ
2.	(ṽo-) beipir	ταῖραιρ,
3.	(ṽo-) beip(-eann ré	ταῖραιανν ré
PLUR. 1.	(ṽo-) beipimíṽ	ταῖραιμíṽ
2.	(ṽo-) beipeann ríṽ	ταῖραιανν ríṽ
3.	(ṽo-) beipíṽ	ταῖραιíṽ

tuḡaim, &c. (like molaim), may be used in both constructions.

Autonomous, (ṽo-)beipṽear, ταῖραιṽear or tuḡtar.

348. By the "Dependent Form" of the Verb we mean that form which is used after the following Particles, viz., ní, not; an, whether; naḥ, whether... not; or who, which or that...not; ḡo, that; cá, where; muna, unless; ṽá, if; and the relative when governed by a preposition.

## 349. Imperfect Tense.

ABSOLUTE.	DEPENDENT.
(ṽo-)beipinn	ταῖραιανν
(ṽo-)beipṽea	&c., like ṽ'fuḡrainn
&c., like buaitinn (262)	(305)

Or, tuḡainn, tuḡta, &c., for both *absolute* and *dependent* constructions.

Autonomous, beipṽi, ταῖραιṽoi, tuḡtai.

**Past Tense.**

**350.** The Past Tense has only one form: *τῆσαρ*, *τῆσαιρ*, &c., like *ἦσταρ* (264). *Ἄντων τῆσαθ*.

In early usage this Past Tense did not take *το* or *μο*, as *ἔτο τῆσαρ*, "that I gave." In present-day usage this peculiarity is sometimes adhered to and sometimes not.

**351. Future Tense.****ABSOLUTE.***(το-)θευρραθ*

&amp;c.,

like *ἠοτρραθ* (265)**DEPENDENT.***τιυθραθ, τιοθραθ**τιυθραιρ, τιοθραιρ**τιυθραιθ ρέ*

*ταθραραθ*, &c., may be used in both constructions.

**Autonomous,** *θευρραρ*      *ταθραραρ*

**352. Conditional.***(το-)θευρραινν*

&amp;c.,

like *ἠοτραινν* (266)*τιυθραινν, τιοθραινν**τιυθραϊτά, τιοθραϊτά*

&amp;c.

*ταθραραινν*, &c., may be used in both constructions.

**Autonomous,** *θεαρραι, ταθραραι.*

**SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.**

This Mood occurs only in dependent construction.

**353. Present**—*τῆσαθ, τῆσαιρ, τῆσαιθ ρέ*, &c., or  
*ταθραθ, ταθραιρ, &c.*

**354. Past**—*τῆσαινν*, &c., like *ἠολαινν* (268).

**Verbal Noun.**

*ταθαιρτ*, gen. *ταθαρτά.*

355.

## ΑΒΑΙΝ, SAY.

Principal Parts.			
Imperative.	Future.	Participle.	Verbal Noun.
αβαιν	{ οευρησῶ αβηρόσῶ	ηάρουε	ηάω

356.

## IMPERATIVE MOOD.

- |              |                        |
|--------------|------------------------|
| 1. —         | αβηαιμῖρ (αβηαιμ)      |
| 2. αβαιν     | αβηαιῶ                 |
| 3. αβηαιῶ ρέ | αβηαιουῖρ, αβηαιουδοιρ |

357.

## Present Tense.

## ABSOLUTE.

## DEPENDENT.

- |                           |                   |
|---------------------------|-------------------|
| 1. (α)οειρημ              | αβηαιμ            |
| 2. (α)οειρηρ              | αβηαιρ            |
| 3. (α)οειρ ορ οειρεανν ρέ | αβηανν ρέ (αβαιρ) |
| 1. (α)οειρημῖο            | αβηαιμῖο          |
| 2. (α)οειρητί             | αβηανν ριῶ        |
| 3. (α)οειρηῖο             | αβηαιῖο           |

Autonomous, (α)οειρητεαρ αβηαιτεαρ

The initial α of αοειρημ, &c., is now usually dropped. The same remark holds for the other tenses. The ο of οειρημ, &c., is not usually aspirated by a foregoing particle. The absolute and dependent constructions are sometimes confused in spoken usage.

358.

## Imperfect Tense.

## ABSOLUTE.

## DEPENDENT.

- |                |           |
|----------------|-----------|
| 1. αοειρημνν   | αβηαιμνν  |
| 2. αοειρητεά   | αβηαιτεά  |
| 3. αοειρηεῶ ρέ | αβηαιῶ ρέ |
| &c.            | &c.       |

Autonomous, αοειρητί

αβηαιτεῶι

359.

**Past Tense.**

ΔΟΥΒΗΡΑΥ, ΔΟΥΒΑΡΤ	ΤΟΥΒΗΡΑΥ, ΤΟΥΒΑΡΤ
ΔΟΥΒΗΡΑΙΥ	ΤΟΥΒΗΡΑΙΥ
ΔΟΥΒΔΙΡΤ ΡΕ	ΤΟΥΒΔΙΡΤ ΡΕ
ΔΟΥΒΗΡΑΜΔΑΥ	ΤΟΥΒΗΡΑΜΔΑΥ
ΔΟΥΒΗΡΑΒΔΑΥ	ΤΟΥΒΗΡΑΒΔΑΥ
ΔΟΥΒΗΡΑΤΩΔΑΥ	ΤΟΥΒΗΡΑΤΩΔΑΥ

**Autonomous, (Δ)ΤΟΥΒΗΡΑΤ or (Δ)ΤΟΥΒΑΡΤΑΥ**

360.

**Future Tense.**

ΤΟΥΡΡΑΤ	ΑΒΗΡΟCΑΤ
ΤΟΥΡΡΑΙΥ	ΑΒΗΡΟCΑΙΥ
ΤΟΥΡΡΑΙΤ ΡΕ	ΑΒΗΡΟCΑΙΤ ΡΕ
<b>Autonomous, ΤΕΔΡΡΑΥ</b>	<b>ΑΒΗΡΟCΤΑΥ</b>

In the spoken language the absolute and dependent forms are often confused.

361.

**Conditional.**

ΤΟΥΡΡΑΙΝΝ	ΑΒΗΡΟCΑΙΝΝ
ΤΟΥΡΡΑ	ΑΒΗΡΟCΤΑ
ΤΟΥΡΡΑΤ ΡΕ	ΑΒΗΡΟCΑΤ ΡΕ

**Autonomous, ΤΕΔΡΡΑΙ****ΑΒΗΡΟCΤΑΙ**

In spoken language the two constructions are often confused.

362.

**SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.**

<b>Present,</b>	ΑΒΗΡΑΤ,	ΑΒΗΡΑΙΥ,	ΑΒΗΡΑΙΤ ΡΕ, &c.
<b>Past,</b>	ΑΒΗΡΑΙΝΝ,	ΑΒΑΡΤΑ,	ΑΒΗΡΑΤ ΡΕ, &c.

363.

**Participles.**

ΠΑΙΡΩΤΕ, ΙΟΝ-ΠΑΙΡΩΤΕ, ΤΟ-ΠΑΙΡΩΤΕ, ΡΟ-ΠΑΙΡΩΤΕ.

**Verbal Noun.**

ΠΑΤ or ΠΑΤΑ, gen. sing. and nom. plur. ΠΑΙΡΩΤΕ

## ՀԱԾ, TAKE.

### 364. Principal Parts.

Imperative.	Future.	Participle.	Verbal Noun.
ՀԱԾ	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{ՀԵԱԾԱԾ} \\ \text{ՀԵՕԾԱԾ} \end{array} \right.$	ՀԱԾՇԱ	ՀԱԾԱԻԼ

This verb is regular except in the Future and Conditional.

### 365. Future.

ՀԵՕԾԱԾ, ՀԵՕԾԱԻՐ, ՀԵՕԾԱԻՇ ԴԵ, &c.

### 366. Conditional.

ՀԵՕԾԱԻՄ, ՀԵՕԾՇԱ, ՀԵՕԾԱՇ ԴԵ, &c.

367. In the spoken language the Future is often made ՀԱԾԲԱԾ, &c., and the Conditional, ՀԱԾԲԱԻՄ, as in regular verbs.

### Verbal Noun.

ՀԱԾԱԻԼ or ՀԱԾԱԼ, gen. sing. and nom. plural ՀԱԾԱԼԱ.

## ԲԱՏ, GET, FIND.

### 368. Principal Parts.

Imperative.	Future.	Participle.	Verbal Noun.
ԲԱՏ	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{ՀԵՕԾԱԾ} \\ \text{ՀԵԱԾԱԾ} \end{array} \right.$	ԲԱՏՇԱ	ԲԱՏԱԻԼ

### 369. IMPERATIVE MOOD.

- |             |          |
|-------------|----------|
| 1. —        | ԲԱՏԱԻՄԻՐ |
| 2. ԲԱՏ      | ԲԱՏԱԻՇ   |
| 3. ԲԱՏԱՇ ԴԵ | ԲԱՏԱԻՐԻՐ |

## INDICATIVE MOOD.

370

## Present Tense.

ABSOLUTE.	DEPENDENT.
(ոօ-) չեմ	բացաւ
„ չես	բացար
„ չեա՞նք, չես ք	բացանք
„ չեմի՞	բացաւի
„ չեա՞նք ք	բացանք ք
„ չեմ	բացաւ

**Autonomous,** (ոօ-) չե՞տար բացար

In spoken usage բացաւ, &c., is used in both dependent and absolute constructions.

In the Auton. բացար, բացեար and բացաւ are used.

371.

## Imperfect Tense.

ABSOLUTE.	DEPENDENT.
(ոօ-) չեմն	բացան
„ չե՞տէ՛	բացէ՛
&c.	&c.

**Autonomous,** չե՞տի, բացեա՛ւ, բացէ՛.

Spoken usage, Absolute, չեմն or բացան, &c.

372.

## Past Tense.

This Tense has only one form for both absolute and dependent constructions. The prefixes ոօ and րօ are not used with it.

SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
1. բար	բարան
2. բարար	բարածար
3. բար ք	բարածար

**Autonomous,** բու՛, բարժար or բարած.

In spoken usage բու՛ often becomes բու՛եա՛.

### 373. Future Tense.

#### ABSOLUTE.

1. *ḡeobḡao, ḡeabḡao*

2. *ḡeobḡaiṛ, &c.*

3. *ḡeobḡaiṛ ré*

1. *ḡeobḡaimiṛ*

2. *ḡeobḡaiṛ riḡ*

3. *ḡeobḡaiṛ*

#### DEPENDENT.

*ḡfuiḡeao or ḡfaiḡeao*

*ḡfuiḡiṛ &c.*

*ḡfuiḡiṛ ré*

*ḡfuiḡimiṛ*

*ḡfuiḡiṛ riḡ*

*ḡfuiḡiṛ*

**Autonomous,**  $\begin{cases} \text{ḡeobḡaiṛ} \\ \text{ḡeabḡaiṛ} \end{cases} \quad \begin{cases} \text{ḡfuiḡeaiṛ} \\ \text{ḡfaiḡeaiṛ} \end{cases}$

### 374. Conditional.

#### ABSOLUTE.

*ḡeobḡainn or ḡeabḡainn*

*ḡeobḡai, &c.*

*ḡeobḡai ré*

*ḡeobḡaimiṛ*

*ḡeobḡai riḡ*

*ḡeobḡaiṛiṛ*

#### DEPENDENT.

*ḡfuiḡinn or ḡfaiḡinn*

*ḡfuiḡeai, &c.*

*ḡfuiḡeai ré*

*ḡfuiḡimiṛ*

*ḡfuiḡeai riḡ*

*ḡfuiḡiṛiṛ*

**Autonomous,**  $\begin{cases} \text{ḡeobḡai} \\ \text{ḡeabḡai} \end{cases} \quad \begin{cases} \text{ḡfuiḡi} \\ \text{ḡfaiḡi} \end{cases}$

### 375. SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

**Present,** *ḡaḡao, ḡaḡaiṛ, ḡaḡaiṛ ré. &c.*

**Past,** *ḡaḡainn, ḡaḡai, ḡaḡai ré, &c.*

### 376. Participle.

*ḡaḡai, ḡaiḡe or ḡaiḡai.*

The derivative participles of this verb are usually formed from the genitive of the verbal noun.

*ion-ḡaḡai, ro-ḡaḡai, ro-ḡaḡai.*



## 377.            ʔeun, DO, MAKE.

## Principal Parts.

Imperative.	Future.	Participle.	Verbal Noun.
ʔeun	ʔeunʔaʔ	ʔeunta	ʔeunaʔ

## 378.            IMPERATIVE MOOD.

1. —	ʔeunaʔimʔ
2. ʔeun	ʔeunaʔ
3. ʔeunaʔ ʔé	ʔeunaʔiʔ

Autonomous, ʔeuntaʔ.

## INDICATIVE MOOD.

## 379.            Present Tense.

ABSOLUTE.	DEPENDENT.
1. (ʔo-) ʒnʔm (ʒnʔʔm)	ʔeunaʔm
2. „ ʒnʔ &c.	ʔeunaʔ
3. „ ʒnʔ ʔé or ʒnʔonn ʔé	ʔeunaʔn ʔé
1. „ ʒnʔimʔ	ʔeunaʔimʔ
2. „ ʒnʔiʔ	ʔeunaʔn ʔiʔ
3. „ ʒnʔ	ʔeunaʔ

Relative, ʒnʔor, ʒnʔʔeʔ

Autonomous, ʒnʔeʔeʔ            ʔeuntaʔ

In present-day usage ʔeunaʔm, &c., are very frequently used in the absolute construction.

**380. Imperfect Tense.**

ABSOLUTE.	DEPENDENT.
ṽo-ḡninn, ḡnōinn	ṽeunainn
„ ḡnitéá, &c.	ṽeuntá
„ ḡníoð ré	ṽeunadó ré
„ ḡnimír	ṽeunaimír
„ ḡníoð ríð	ṽeunadó ríð
„ ḡníoir	ṽeunairoír
<b>Autonomous, ṽo-ḡnící</b>	ṽeuntadoi

**381. Past Tense.**

ṽo-pinnear	ṽeápnar
„ pinnir	ṽeápnair
„ pinne ré	ṽeápná ré
„ pinneamar	ṽeápnamar
„ pinneaðar	ṽeápnaðar
„ pinneadóar	ṽeápnadóar

**Autonomous, ṽo-pinneadó** ṽeápnadó

In Munster dialect ṽeinear, ṽeinir, ṽein ré, ṽeineamar, ṽeineaðar, and ṽeineadóar are used as the Past Tense in *both* absolute and dependent constructions.

**382. Future Tense.****ABSOLUTE AND DEPENDENT.**

ṽeunfað	ṽeunfaimíð
ṽeunfair	ṽeunfaioð ríð
ṽeunfaioð ré	ṽeunfaio

**Autonomous, ṽeunfar****383. Conditional.**

ṽeunfainn	ṽeunfaimír
ṽeunfá	ṽeunfað ríð
ṽeunfað ré	ṽeunfaioír

**Autonomous, ṽeunfaí**

## 384. SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

## Present.

deunad deunair deunad ré deunamadair, &c.

## Past.

deunainn deuntá deunad ré deunamadair, &c.

## Participles.

deunta ion-deunta ro-deunta do-deunta

## Verbal Noun.

deunam (deunad) gen. deunta

## 385. feic, SEE.

## Principal Parts.

Imperative.	Future.	Participle.	Verbal Noun.
feic	{ cifead feicfead	feicte	feicrim

## 386. IMPERATIVE MOOD.

1. — feicimír (feiceam)
2. feic feicir
3. feicead ré feiciré

387. The imperative 2nd sing. and 2nd plural are hardly ever found; for we rarely command or ask a person to "see" anything, except in the sense of "look at" it. In Irish a distinct verb is always used in the sense of "look at," such as feuch, dearc, breathnaigh, &c. The verb feuch must not be confounded with feic; it is a distinct verb, and has a complete and regular conjugation.

388. In early modern Irish fāic was the stem used in the imperative and in the dependent construction throughout the entire verb.

389.

## INDICATIVE MOOD.

## Present Tense.

## ABSOLUTE.

## DEPENDENT.

1. do-áim (áiríom)	feicim
2. do-áir, &c.	feicir
3. do-ái ré, áionn re	feiceann ré
1. do-áimís	feicimís
2. do-áicí	feiceann rí
3. do-áís	feicis

Autonomous, {	do-áitear	feictear
	do-áitear	

390. The prefix *do-*, now usually dropped, is an altered form of the old prefix *at—e.g.*, *atáim*. This form survives in the spoken language only in the Ulster form, *'táim* or *taíom*, &c.

391.

## Imperfect Tense.

do-áinn, áiríonn	feicinn
do-áiteá, &c.	feicteá
do-áísó ré	feicead ré
do-áimís	feicimis
do-áísó rí	feicead rí
do-áísís	feicisís

In spoken language *feicinn*, &c., is used in both Absolute and Dependent constructions.

Ulster usage, *taíveann*, *taíteá*, &c.

392.

## Past Tense.

## ABSOLUTE.

## DEPENDENT.

1.	{ connac { connacar	(connarcar)	{ facar { feacar { faca { feaca
2.	connacair	(connarcar)	facair feacar
3.	connaic ré	(connairc ré)	faca ré feaca ré
1.	connacamar	[connarcamar]	facamar feacamair
2.	connacabair	[connarcabair]	facabair feacabair
3.	connacadar	[connarcadar]	facadar feacadar

**Autonomous,** connacar facar or factar

The older spelling was *atconnac* and *atconnaric*, &c. The *τ* is still preserved in the Ulster dialect: *éanaic me*, &c., I saw.

393.

## Future Tense.

(do-)cífear, cífear,	feicfead,
(do-)cífir, cífir,	feicfir,
&c.	&c.

**Autonomous,** cífear feicfeair

394.

## Conditional.

(do-)cífinn, cífinn,	feicfinn,
&c.	&c.

In the Future and Conditional *feicfead*, &c., and *feicfinn*, &c., can be used in both constructions.

395.

## SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

**Present,** feicead, feicir, feicir ré, &c.

**Past,** feicinn, feicteá, feicead ré, &c.

**Participle,** feicte.

396.

## Verbal Noun.

feircint, feircint, gen. feircena.

From the genitive of the verbal noun the **compound participles** are formed: viz., in-feircena, ro-feircena, do-feircena.

397.

## CLOIS or CLUIN, HEAR.

These two verbs are quite regular except in the **Past Tense**.

In old writings the particle *at* or *do-* is found prefixed to all the tenses in the absolute construction, but this particle is now dropped.

398.

## Past Tense.

cuatar, cuata

cuatamar

cuatair

cuataðar

cuata ré

cuataðar

Autonomous, cuatacat

## Verbal Nouns.

clor or cloirint (or more modern cluinint or cloirtin).

## TAR, COME.

399.

## IMPERATIVE.

SING. 1. —

PLUR. tigramir (tigeam)

2. tar

tigrð

3. tigeað (taɣað) ré

tigrðir

## INDICATIVE MOOD.

## 400. Present Tense.

1. τῖσιμ	τῖσιμιο
2. τῖσιρ	τῖσι
3. τῖσι ρέ	τῖσι

Relative (wanting).

Autonomous, τῖσιτεαρ.

The Present Tense has also the forms τᾶσαιμ or τεᾶσαιμ inflected regularly.

## 401. Imperfect Tense.

τῖσιnn, ᾶσαιnn, or τεᾶσαιnn, regularly.

## 402. Past Tense.

ᾶσαιρ, ᾶσαις	ᾶσαιμαρ
ᾶσαιρ	ᾶσαιθαρ
ᾶσαις ρέ	ᾶσαιθαρ

## 403. Autonomous, τᾶσαιρ.

The *ng* in this Tense is not sounded like *ng* in *long*, a *ship*, but with a helping vowel between them—*e.g.*, 2nd pers. sing.—is pronounced as if written ᾶσαιρ; but in Munster the *g* is silent except in the 3rd pers. sing.—*e.g.*, ᾶσαιρ is pronounced *haw-nuss*.

404. Future Tense, τῖσιραο, &c., inflected regularly; also spelled τῖσιραο, &c.

Relative, τῖσιραρ

Conditional, τῖσιραinn, &amp;c., inflected regularly.



**405. SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.**

Present, *τιγεαο, ταγαο, or τεαγαο*, inflected regularly.

Past, *τιγιnn, ταγαnn, or τεαγαnn*, inflected regularly.

**406. Verbal Noun, τεαατ (or τιοθαατ, τιθαατ)**

**Participle, τεαγτα or ταγτα.**

**407. ΤΕΙΞ, GO.**

N.B.—The present stem is also spelled *τείρ*, but *τείξ* is preferable, as it better represents the older form, *τιας* or *τείς*.

**408. IMPERATIVE.**

- |                             |                    |
|-----------------------------|--------------------|
| 1. —                        | τείξιμίρ (τείγεαμ) |
| 2. <i>τείξ</i>              | τείξιθ             |
| 3. <i>τείγεαθ</i> <i>ρέ</i> | τείξιθίρ           |

**409.** In the Imperative 2nd sing. and 2nd plur. other verbs are now usually substituted, such as *γαθ, ιμτίξ, τείμιξ*. The use of *τείμιξ*, plur. *τείμιξιθ*, seems to be confined to these two forms; *ιμτίξ* has a full, regular conjugation.

**INDICATIVE MOOD.****410. Present.**

- |  |                    |
|--|--------------------|
| 1. <i>τείξιμ (τείρόιμ)</i>                   | 1. <i>τείξιμίθ</i> |
| 2. <i>τείξιη &amp;c.</i>                     | 2. <i>τείξιτί</i>  |
| 3. <i>τείξ</i> <i>ρέ, τείγεαnn</i> <i>ρέ</i> | 3. <i>τείξιθ</i>   |

**Autonomous, *τείγτεαρ***

**Imperfect Tense.**

téiginn (or téiröinn), &c., regularly.

**411. Past Tense.****ABSOLUTE.****DEPENDENT.**

1. éuaðar

veaçar

2. éuaðair

veaçaí

3. éuaið ré

veaçaíð ré

1. éuaðamar

veaçamar

2. éuaðaðar

veaçaðar

3. éuaðaðar

veaçaðar

**Autonomous,** éuaðtar

veaçar

In Munster éuaðar, &c., is used in the dependent construction, as níor éuaið ré, he did not go. Veaçar, &c., is also used in Munster.

**412. Future.****SINGULAR.****PLURAL.**

1. raçao, raçao

raçamaoio, raçamaoio

2. raçaí, raçaí

raçaíð ríð, raçaíð ríð

3. raçaíð ré, raçaíð ré

raçaio, raçaio

Relative, raçar, raçar.

Autonomous, raçtar, raçtar.

**413. Conditional.**

raçainn or raçainn, &c., regularly.

The Future and Conditional are sometimes spelled raçao, &c., and raçainn, &c.

## 414. SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

Present, *τέιγεαο, τέιγιη, τέιγιὸ ρέ, &c.*Past, *τέιγιन्न, τέιγτεα, τέιγεαὸ ρέ, &c.*

## 415. Verbal Noun.

*ουτ, gen. ουλα (sometimes ουττα).*

## Participle of Necessity.

*ουττα (as, ní ουττα ὁδ, he ought not to go).*

## Derivative Participles.

*ιον-ουλα, ρο-ουλα, οο-ουλα.*416. *ιτ*, EAT.

This verb is regular except in the Future and Conditional.

## Principal Parts.

Imper.	Future.	Participle.	Verbal Noun.
<i>ιτ</i>	<i>ιοραο</i>	<i>ιττε</i>	<i>ιτε</i>

## 417. Future Tense.

## SINGULAR.

## PLURAL.

1. *ιοραο (ιορραο)**ιοραμαοιο*2. *ιοραιη, &c.**ιοραιὸ ριὸ*3. *ιοραιὸ ρέ**ιοραιο*Relative, *ιοραη (ιορραη).*Autonomous, *ιορταη.*

## 418. Conditional.

## SINGULAR.

## PLURAL.

1. *ιοραιन्न (ιορραιन्न)**ιοραμαοιη*2. *ιορτα, &c.**ιοραὸ ριὸ*3. *ιοραὸ ρέ**ιοραιοιη*

419. As well as the regular Past Tense, տ'իւեար, &c., there is another Past Tense, viz., տստօր, in use.

SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
1. տստօր	տստօտար
2. տստօր	տստօծար
3. տստօր թէ	տստօտօր

### ՐԻՇԻՄ, I REACH.

420. This verb is nearly obsolete, its place being taken by the regular verbs բրօւիմ and բրօւրիմ.

Its Past Tense is inflected like տանայ.

1. րանայ, րանայ	րանատար
2. րանայր	րանածար
3. րանայ թէ	րանատօր

### 421. Verbal Noun.

բօժտիւմ or բաժտիւմ.

Րիշիմ has a special usage in the phrase բիշիմ աւար, "*I need*," (whence, բաժտար, need, necessity: բաժտանաժ, necessary: from the verbal noun.)

### ՄԱՐԾԱԻՄ or ՄԱՐԾԱԻՇԻՄ, I KILL.

422. This verb is quite regular except in Future and Conditional.

**Future**, մարծաւ, մարծօւ, մարբօւ, մարբօւ, մարբօւ (with usual terminations).

**Conditional**, մարծաւի, մարծօւի, մարբօւի, մարբօւի, մարբօւի or մարբօւի, &c., &c.

### Verbal Noun.

մարծօւ or մարբօւ, to kill or killing.

## SOME DEFECTIVE VERBS.

423. **ΔΙ**, quoth, say or said. This verb is used only when the exact words of the speaker are given. (It corresponds exactly with the Latin "*inquit*." ) It is frequently written **ΔΙΡΑ** or **ΔΙΡ**, as **ΔΙΡΑ** *míre*, said I. When the definite article immediately follows this latter form the *ρ* is often joined to the article, as, **ΔΙΡ** *án* **féar** or **ΔΙ** *ran* **féar**, says the man. "**ΓΙΑ** *tú* **féin**?" **ΔΙ** *reíreán*. "Who are you?" said he.

When the exact words of the speaker are not given translate "says" by *deir*, and "said" by *duðairt*. When the word "*that*" is understood after the English verb "*say*" *go* (or *nac* if "*not*" follows) *must be expressed in Irish*.

424. **ḐΔΙ**, It seems or it seemed. This verb is always followed by the preposition *le*: as, **ḐΔΙ** *uom*, it seems to me, methinks; or, it seemed to me, methought. **ḐΔΙ** *leat*. It seems to you. **ḐΔΙ** *leir* **án** *béar*. It seemed to the man.

425. **féadad**, I know, I knew. This verb is nearly always used negatively or interrogatively, and although really a past tense has a present meaning as well as a

past. *ní féadair.* I do, or did, not know. *ní féadair ré.* He does not know, or he did not know.

## SINGULAR.

## PLURAL.

1. *féadar*1. *féadamar*2. *féadair (-ir)*2. *féadabair*3. *féadair ré*3. *féadabair*

N.B.—The forms just given are those used in the spoken language, the literary forms are: *féadar*, *féadair tú*, *féadair ré*, *féadamar*, *féadabair*, and *féadabair*.

426. *ṡárġa*, There came to pass, it happened or happened to be. It is also used to express the meeting of one person with another.

427. *ṡ'fóbaġr* or *ba ṡóbaġr*, "It all but happened." *E.g.*, *ṡ'fóbaġr ṡam tuitim*, It all but happened to me to fall, I had like to fall, I had well nigh fallen. The same meaning is expressed by *ṡ'fóbaġr go ṡtuitġinn*.

428. *féudaim*, I can, is regular in all its tenses, but it has no imperative mood.

---

## CHAPTER VI.

---

### The Adverb.

429. There are not many simple adverbs in Irish, the greater number of adverbs being made up of two or more words. Almost every Irish adjective may be-

come an adverb by having the particle “**SO**” prefixed to it: as, **maĩt**, good; **so maĩt**, well; **umal**, humble; **so n-umal**, humbly.

**430.** This **so** is really the preposition **so\*** with its meaning of “with.” (Do not confound this word with **so** meaning “to,” they are two distinct prepositions). Of course this particle has now lost its original meaning in the case of most adverbs.

**431.** Adverbs may be compared; their comparative and superlative degrees are, however, those of the adjectives from which they are derived; the particle **so** is not used before the comparative or superlative.

**432.** It may be well to remark here that when an adjective begins with a vowel **so** prefixes **n**, as **so n-annam**, seldom.

**433.** The following list may now be regarded as simple adverbs although many of them are disguised compounds.

<b>amac</b>	out (used <i>only</i> after a verb of motion).
<b>amuiṣ, amuiṣ</b>	outside, out; never used after a verb of motion. He is out, <b>tá ré amuiṣ</b> . He is standing outside the door, <b>tá ré 'na řearam taob amuiṣ de 'n doṣar</b> .

---

\* This preposition is now used only in a few phrases; as **míle so leiṭ**, a mile and (*with*) a half: **řlat so leiṭ**, a yard and a half: **bliaṭain so leiṭ ó řoin**, a year and a half ago.



ám, amác, } however.  
ámčac,

ámáin, alone, only.

ámait, as, like.

ámłair, thus.

anoct, to-night.

anoir, now.

arér, last night.

arír(τ). again.

cá? where?

ceana, already, previously.

conur? cionnur? how?

com, com, as (*see par.* 154).

feard, henceforth, at once.

leir, } also.  
freirín,

fór, yet.

ı muřa, amú, astray (mis-  
taken).

inoé (ané), yesterday.

inoiu (anoiu), to-day.

ı mbárac (amárac), to-  
morrow.

ırceac, in (*motion only*).

ırtıg, inside (*rest*).

go h-annam, seldom.

go fórl, yet, awhile.

ní (níor), } not.  
ča (čar), (*Ulster*),

nuair, when.

cačain? } when?  
cařoin?

mar, as, like.

mar řin, thus.

řú, *even*; as, níor labair řé řú don focal amáin.  
*He did not speak even one word.* řan řú na h-anála  
do čarřaing. *Without even taking breath.* řú is  
really a **noun**, and is followed by the **genitive case**,  
whenever the **definite article** comes between it and  
the **noun**; otherwise it is followed by a **nominative case**.

**434.** It may be useful to remark here that the words  
inoiu, *to-day*; inoé, *yesterday*; ı mbárac, *to-morrow*;  
arér, *last night*; anoct, *to-night*; can be used only  
as **adverbs**. *He came to-day.* čáinig řé inoiu. *He*

went away yesterday. *O' imtīg ré inóe.* When the English words are **nouns**, we must use *an* *lá* (or *an oiróce*) before *inóiu*, *inóe*, *apéir*, etc. *Yesterday was fine.* *Ói an lá inóe bpeáḡ.* *To-morrow will be wet.* *Deiró an lá i mbárac pluú.* *Last night was cold.* *Ói an oiróce apéir fuar.*

### 435. Interrogative Words.

when? *catáin?* *cé an uair?* which (*adj.*)? *cé an...?*  
*cé an t-am?*

where? *cá?* *cé an áit?* what? *cad?* *cpeud?*  
*conad?* *ceud?*

how? *conur* (*cionnur*)? *cé* whither? *cá?*  
*an éadai?* *ḡo dé mar?*

why? *cad 'na éadob?* *cad* whence? *cad ar?* *cá'r*  
*cuige?* *cad fáit?* *cé* *ab ar?*  
*an fáit?*

how far? } *cé an fáit?* how much? } *cé meud?*

how long? } *an fáda?* how many? } *an mó?*

which (*pron.*)? *ciocad?* *cé?* who? *cé?* *cia?* *cé h-é* (*i, láo*)?

### Up and Down.

436. { *fuar*, upwards, **motion upwards** from the place where the speaker is.  
Up. { *aníor*, upwards, **motion up** from below to the place where the speaker is.  
{ *tuar* (also spelled *fuar*), up, **rest above** the place where the speaker is.  
{ *aníor* (*abur*),\* up, **rest** where the speaker is.

\* This form is used in Ulster and North Connaught, but generally this word is used only for rest on this side of a room, river, &c., or here, where we are.

Down.	{	ρίορ, downwards, motion down from where the speaker is.
	{	ἀνωαρ, downwards, motion down from above to where the speaker is.
	{	τίορ (ρίορ), down, below, rest below the place where the speaker is.
	{	ἀνωαρ (ἀβωρ), * down, rest where the speaker is.

437. The following examples will fully illustrate the use of the words for “up” and “down” :—

A.	A says to B,	I'll throw it down,	Καίτρω μέ ρίορ έ.
		Is it down yet?	Όφουλ ρέ τίορ ρόρ?
		Throw it up,	Καίτ ανίορ έ.
		It is up now,	Τά ρέ ανίορ ανοίρ.
	B says to A,	I'll throw it up,	Καίτρω μέ ρωαρ έ.
		Is it up yet?	Όφουλ ρέ τωαρ ρόρ?
		Throw it down,	Καίτ ανωαρ έ.
		It is down now.	Τά ρέ ανωαρ ανοίρ.
	B.		

N.B.—He is up (i.e., he is not in bed), Τά ρέ 'να ρωίρε.

We are up, Τά ρινν 'νάρρωίρε

\* See foot-note at end of page 160.



# North, South. East, West.

The root *oir* means *front*: *iar* means *back*.

440. The ancients faced the rising sun in naming the points of the compass; hence *toir*, east; *tiar*, west; *tuaid*, north; *teas*, south.

441.

Rest	Motion from the speaker towards the	Motion towards the speaker from the	Prepositional use, east of, west of, north of, south of,
<i>toir</i> , east	<i>roir</i>	<i>aiioir</i>	{ * <i>lar</i> toir ve; <i>ai an</i> <i>taob toir</i> ve; <i>uia† toir</i> ve
<i>tiar</i> , west	<i>riar</i>	<i>aiiar</i>	{ * <i>lar</i> tiar ve; <i>ai an</i> <i>taob tiar</i> ve; <i>uia tiar</i> ve
<i>tuaid</i> , north	<i>ó tuaid</i>	<i>aituaid</i>	{ * <i>lar</i> tuaid ve; <i>ai an</i> <i>taob tuaid</i> ve; <i>uia tuaid</i> ve
<i>teas</i> , south	<i>ó teas</i>	<i>aitneas</i>	{ * <i>lar</i> teas ve; <i>ai an</i> <i>taob teas</i> ve; <i>uia teas</i> ve

442. The noun "north," etc., is *an taob tuaid*, *an taob teas*, etc., or *tuairceart*, *veirceart*, *iartair*, and *oirneas*. These latter words are obsolescent.

443.

The North wind, *an gaoth aituaid* N.W. wind, *gaoth aiuar aituaid*  
 „ South „ „ *aitneas* S.E. wind, *gaoth aoiur aiteas*  
 „ East „ „ *aioir* etc., etc.  
 „ West „ „ *aiuar* Notice the change of position in Irish.

444. With reference to a house, *riar* is *inwards*; *roir* is *outwards*.

\* *leas* or *las* may be used. † Probably a corruption of *iotaob*.

## 445. Compound or Phrase Adverbs.

1 ḡcáin, far off ( <i>space</i> ).	ar don cor,	} at all.
1 bḡad, far off ( <i>space and time</i> ).	1 n-don cor,	
	ar bit,	
	cor ar bit,	
ar air, back.	cor leir rin, moreover.	
ar ḡcút, backwards.	ar don cuma,	} at any rate.
ar otúr, } at first, or in	ar cuma ar bit,	
ar otúr, } the beginning.		
annro, h. re.	pé rḡeal é,	} however,
ann ran (rain, rin), there,	pé ruo é,	
then.	1 n-airḡe, gratis.	
ro ríor,	1 otairḡe, in safe keeping.	
1 ḡcomnuíde, } always.	1 n-airḡeair, in vain.	
coiróce, ever ( <i>future</i> ).	tuille eile,	} moreover,
ruam, ever ( <i>past</i> ).	tuille fóir,	
ḡo deo, for ever.	1 leit, apart, aside.	
ḡo bráct(ác), for ever.	cad ar?	} whence?
pé (or fá) úó, twice.	cá n-ar?	
pé (or fá) trí, thrice.	cé meuo?	} how much?
pé (or fá) řeác, by turns.	cá meuo?	
1 látair, present.	an mó?	
ar látair, absent.	oe ló, by day.	
oe látair, presently, just now.	ir' oiróce,	} by night.
	o' oiróce,	
beas nac,	ó céile,	} asunder.
nac mór,	ó n-a céile,	
ḡeall le,	1 n-éinřeácť, together.	
ḡo léir,	pé tuairim, conjecturally.	
ḡo n-iomlán,		

eadon (*written .1.*),

ó éianaið,

ó éiantaið,

so leor,

o'ár noóis (oóic),

oo zeit,

i scéadói,

lom-láitpeac,

láitpeac bonn,

ar an tooir,

ar uaiuib,

uaipeannat,

anoir 7 arir,

so h-áirigce,

so ronradac,

so mórmór,

so h-urimór,

ar ball,

oála an rgeilor oálta riúo,

i n-áirve,

coranáirve,

so deimín or so dearbta,

so deimín ir so dearbta,

ambriacar 'r ambapa,

oá riuib,

mar an scéadon,

ó join i leit,

ó join amac,

ar éisín,

namely.

awhile ago.

ages ago.

enough.

sure, surely.

immediately, instantly.

sometimes.

especially.

by and bye, after awhile.

by the bye.

on high.

at full gallop.

indeed.

really and truly.

really, in fact.

likewise, in like manner.

from that time to this.

from that time out.

hardly, with difficulty,  
perforce.



an cúro ir mó óe, } ar (a) iomaó, }	at most.
an cúro ir luḡa óe, } ar a laḡaó (laḡeáó), }	at least.
ar a fón ran (ir uile),	notwithstanding (all that).
com fáda 'r ( <i>use le before noun</i> ) } an fáio ( <i>rel. form of verb</i> ) }	whilst, as long as.
ó' don ḡnó,	purposely.
com maic aḡur óá,	just as if.
le h-éirḡe an lae,	at dawn.
ḡan coinne le, } ḡan rúil le, }	unexpectedly.
óe ḡnát (ḡnátac),	usually.
maí acá, maí acáio,	namely, viz., i.e.
ór íriol,	secretly, lowly.
ór áro,	aloud, openly.
ar maidin,	in the morning.
ra trátóna, } um trátóna, }	in the evening.
ar maidin inoiu,	this morning.
ar maidin i mbárac,	to-morrow morning.
ra trátóna inoiu,	this evening.
acruḡaó inóe,	on the day before yesterday
acruḡaó i mbárac,	} on the day after to- morrow.
anoirítear, umánoirítear,	
lá ar n-a bárac,	on the following day.
i mbliáóna,	( <i>during</i> ) this year.
anuráio,	( <i>during</i> ) last year.
acruḡaó anuráio,	( <i>during</i> ) the year before last

446. The phrases which have just been given about morning, evening, &c., are strictly adverbial, and cannot be used as nouns.

447.

### Adverbs.

### Nouns.

ἡ ΔΙΑ ΤΟΜΗΝΑΙΣ, on Sunday	ΤΟΜΗΝΑΕ, m., Sunday
ἡ ΔΙΑ ΛΥΑΙΝ, on Monday	ΛΥΑΝ, m., Monday
ἡ ΔΙΑ ΜΑΙΡΤ, on Tuesday	ΜΑΙΡΤ, f., Tuesday
ἡ ΔΙΑ ΤΕΥΘΑΟΙΝ', on Wednesday	ΤΕΥΘΑΟΙΝ, f., Wednesday
ἡ ΔΙΑ ΤΑΡΘΑΟΙΝ', on Thursday	ΤΑΡΘΑΟΙΝ, f., Thursday
ἡ ΔΙΑ Η-ΔΟΙΝΕ, on Friday	ΔΟΙΝΕ, f., Friday
ἡ ΔΙΑ ΣΑΤΑΙΡΝ, on Saturday	ΣΑΤΑΙΡΝ, m., Saturday

448. ΔΙΑ takes the name of the day in the genitive case; it is used only when "on" is, or may be, used in English—i.e., when the word is adverbial.

ΔΙΑ is really an old word for day. It occurs in the two expressions : η-ΔΙΑ, to-day; η-ΝΕ, yesterday. It is now never used except before the names of the days of the week, and in the two expressions just mentioned.

449.

### "Head-foremost."

He fell head-foremost,	Ὁο τῆς ῥῆς ἡ ΝΟΙΑΙΟ* Δ ΕΙΝΝ.
I fell head-foremost,	Ὁο τῆς ῥῆς ἡ ΝΟΙΑΙΟ ΜΟ ΕΙΝΝ.
She fell head-foremost,	Ὁο τῆς ῥῆς ἡ ΝΟΙΑΙΟ Δ ΕΙΝΝ.
They fell head-foremost,	Ὁο τῆς ῥῆς ἡ ΝΟΙΑΙΟ Δ ΕΙΝΝ.

---

\* ΝΟΙΑΙΟ is a phrase meaning "after," and is followed by a genitive case.

**However.**

**However** followed in English by an adjective or an adverb is translated into Irish by the preposition **oo** (*or oe*), the possessive adjective **a**, and an **abstract noun** corresponding to the English adjective or adverb.

However good, **o'á fedaḃar**. However long, **o'á fáio**.  
 However great, **o'á méio**. However violent, **o'á éisniḡe**.

However high, **o'á doirḡe**. However young, **o'á óiḡe**

**The Adverb "The."**

The sooner the better,	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{o'á luaité 'reao (ir} \\ \text{amlaio) ir fearr.} \\ \text{ní'l o'á luaité naḡ amlaio} \\ \text{(eao) ir fearr.} \\ \text{o'á luaitéadḡ ir fearrḡe.} \end{array} \right.$
The longer...the bolder,	<b>o'á fáio 'reao ir oána.</b>
The sooner...the less,	<b>o'á luaité 'reao ir luḡa.</b>

**CHAPTER VII.****Prepositions.**

**450.** The following list contains the simple prepositions in use in modern Irish:—

í, a, in, (ann) in.	go, to ( <i>mótion</i> ).
as, (aís), at.	roim, before.
ar, (air), on.	roir, between.
ar, out of.	le, with.
oar, by ( <i>in swearing</i> ).	ó, from.
oe, off, from.	tar, { over, across.
oo, to.	tar, }
fé, faoi, fó, fá, under.	tré, trío, through.
gan, without.	um, im, concerning, about.

## CHAPTER VIII.

## Conjunctions.

451. The following is a list of the conjunctions in use at present:—

oe bñíḡ ḡo	} because.	má, v́á, if.
ḡaoi ḡáṑ 'ḡ ḡo,		muna, muna, if...not.
cion iḡ,		ḡiṑeáṑ, however.
cion iḡ ḡo,		ḡor leiḡ ḡin,
áct, but, except.		ḡuṑ eile (ṑe),
áḡur (á'ḡ, iḡ, 'ḡ), and.	} moreover.	tuille ḡór,
iṑiḡ...áḡur, both...and.		tuille eile,
an (aḡ), whether ( <i>interrog.</i> )		maḡ, as.
ar a ḡon ḡo,	} although.	ná, than ; nor.
ḡiúṑ iḡ ḡo,		ḡo (ḡur), that.
cíṑ, ḡiṑ,		maḡ iḡ ḡo, as though.
cé ḡo, ḡiṑ ḡo,		i ṑṡḡeo ḡo (naḡ),
ḡo,	} until (with verbs).	ar nóḡ ḡo (naḡ),
nó ḡo,		ar mṑṑ ḡo (naḡ),
áct ḡo,		i ḡcár ḡo (naḡ),
ḡo ṑcí ḡo,		ar ḡor ḡo (naḡ),
com luac ar,		ar ṑóíḡ ḡo (naḡ),
v́á luar ḡ,	} as soon as.	i ḡcáoí ḡo (naḡ),
an túiḡe ḡo,		ionnur ḡo (naḡ),*
ḡór, yet, still.	} before.	ḡeacár, compared with.
ḡul ; ḡar,		nó, or.
ḡul a ṑcí,		ó, since, because.
ḡul má ṑcí,		ó naḡ, since...not.
ḡul v́á ṑcí,		óḡ, for, because.

\* ḡo and naḡ are very frequently separated from ionnur by a subordinate or relative clause: e.g., "ionnur, an tí ar a mbiaṑ an ḡiḡin ḡin, ḡo mbiaṑ ṑeapmann áíḡe ó'n oḡṑeac;" so that the person who would be marked with that sign would have protection from the slaughter.

mairead. well, if so.      ó tárta go, whereas.  
 uime rin, therefore, where-      tar ceann, moreover, be-  
 fore.      sides, furthermore.  
 an an áobair rin, therefore.      nac      }  
 mar rin féin, even so.      ná, ná go,      } that...not.  
 bíod go, although, whether  
 ...or.

452. In Munster "that...not" is usually translated by **NÁ** followed by the dependent form of the verb. **NÁ** neither aspirates nor eclipses. In the past tense it becomes **nár** which causes aspiration. Whenever "that...not" follows a negative (or a *virtual* negative) phrase, **ná go** is used (**ná gur** in the past tense).

Tá fíor aige féin ná fuil an ceart aige. He knows himself that he is not right.

Ní deirim (or *deirim*) ná go bfuil an ceart aige. I don't say that he is not right.

**naC** is used in Munster as a part of the verb **ir**.

453. The use of **mar** before a clause is noteworthy.

fá mar aobairt ré, (according) as he said.

tar mar bí ré deic mbliadna rícead ó foin.

Beyond (or compared with) how it was 30 years ago.

i taob mar deir tú, regarding what you say.

táinig ré mar a raib fionn. He came to where Finn was.

maṛ ḏṭṭ or maṛ ḏṭṭo, that is, viz., i.e.

maṛ ʒo mbaṭ iḏo fēin ṭo ṭeunam an  
ʒnioma, as if it were they who per-  
formed the act.

maṛ an ʒceurona, likewise.

maṛ ʒeall an, on account of.

## CHAPTER IX.

### 454. Interjections and Interjectional Phrases.

Δ,

O (the sign of the Vocative  
case).

hush! list!

Εἰς,

φοῖνον!

φαῖνον!

mo ḃrón!

mo ḃpeac!

mo léan!

mo léan ʒeup!

ʒeuc!

Ó bú bú! oc! uc! ucón!

mo náipe tú!

. . . Δ bú!

ʒáilte nómat!

Alas!

Behold! lo!

Alas!

Shame on you!

Hurrah for . . . !

Welcome!

Dia do beata! }	
'Sé do beata! }	Hail!
Slán leat (lib)! }	
Slán beo agat (agaid)! }	Good-bye!
Beannaíct leat (lib)! }	
Dia linn!	God be with us!
Maireadh!	Well! Musha!
Foirgíó (foirgne)!	Patience!
Faigh!	Take care! Fie!
Go dtéir tú rian!	Safe home!
Go foirbígíó Dia duit!	God prosper you!
Bí 'do tóir! }	
Eir do beul! }	Silence!
Mo goirm tú!	Bravo!
Súo ort! }	
Sláinte! }	Good health!
Mait an fear!	Good man!
Mait an buachaill!	Good fellow!
Duirdeácar leat! }	
Go raib mait agat! }	Thanks! thank you!
Go n-éirígíó áó leat!	Good luck to you!
Náir léigíó Dia rin!	God forbid!
Go mbeannuigíó Dia duit!	God save you! Good morning! &c.
Go maire, }	
Go maire tú! }	Long life to you!
Go bfuilíó Dia orainn!	God help us!
Oíóce mait duit!	May you have a good night!
Go dtugaid Dia oíóce mait duit!	May God give you a good night!



Go mbuaðair òia leat !	God grant you success !
Slán coðalta na h-oirðe aḡat !	Sound night's sleep to you !
Go scootalaḡ go ráth !	May you sleep peacefully .
Ùail ó òia oir !	God bless you !
Cuireadhán òé leat !	May God accompany you !
Fao raogail aḡat !	Long life to you !
Ùair leat !	Success to you !
Raḡ go raib oir !	
'Seadh !	Well !
'Seadh anoir !	There now !
Coḡar i leit !	Whisper (here) !
Ambara !	Indeed !
Mo ḡrairín cpoirde tu !	Bravo !
A cuir !	My dear !
Ac airde !	Dear me !

---

## CHAPTER X.

---

### WORD-BUILDING.

---

#### Prefixes.

**455.** The following is a list of the principal prefixes used in Irish. Some of them have double forms owing to the rule *caol te caol*.

αιρ or ειρ, back, again; like the English *re*;

ioc, payment; αιριoc, repayment, restitution.

am	or	amh,	Negative particles	(	perō, even; amperō, un- even.
an	,,	anh,		(	trapāt, time; 1 n-antpāt, un- timely.
oi	,,	oio,*		(	ceann, a head; oiceannaō to behead.
mi	,,	mio,		(	comapte, an advice; mio- comapte, an evil advice.
neamh	,,	neimh,		(	nirō, a thing; neimnirō, no- thing, non-entity.
		ear,		(	cāirpōear, friendship; ear- cāirpōear, enmity.

é or éa, a negative particle. It eclipses c and τ and becomes éas before ρ. Cōir, just; éas cōir, unjust; trōm, heavy; éas trōm, light; cōrmail, like; eugramail, different.

opoc, bad, evil; meap, esteem; opoc-meap, reproach, disesteem.

com, equal; ampir, time; com-ampeapac, contemporary.

---

\* oi, oio eclipse words beginning with b or p, oioimbuiōeacap, ingratitude.

an,	Intensifying particles	món, big; an-món, very big.
il, iol,		oat, a colour; ioloatad, many-coloured.
no,		món, big; no-món, too big.
ran,		te, warm; ran-te, excessively warm
lan,		aiobéil, vast; lan-aiobéil, awfully vast.
ur,		sránua, ugly; ur-sránua, very ugly.

leat, a half; leat-uair, half an hour; rgeul, a story; leit-rgeul, an excuse.

in, ion, fit, suitable; oeunta, done; in-oeunta, fit to be done; ráirte, said; ion-ráirte, fit to be said; ion-molta, praiseworthy; ion-olta, drinkable; in-itte, eatable, edible. (See pars. 286, 288.)

neum, before; ráirte, said; neum-ráirte, aforesaid.

rrut, back; rrut-teact, coming and going; rrut-bualao, palpitation, or a return stroke.

ban, a feminine prefix; flait, a prince; ban-flait, a princess; bain-tigearna, a lady.

at, a reiterative particle: ráo, a saying; at-ráo, a repetition; atuair, another time; an atóliaóain, next year; an atreachtmain, next week. at has sometimes the force of "dis" in dismantle, as cumao, to form;

at̃cumat̃, to deform, destroy; r̃ioḡat̃, to crown, to elect a king; at̃r̃ioḡat̃, to de-throne.

bit̃, biot̃, lasting, constant; buan, lasting; biot̃-buan, everlasting; bit̃-f̃ipeun, ever-faithful.

oo and ro, two particles which have directly opposite meanings, as have often the letters o and r. Oo denotes *difficulty, ill, or the absence of some good quality*; ro denotes the opposite.

oo-ḡeunt̃, hard to be done	ro-ḡeunt̃, easy to be done
oól̃ar̃, sorrow	ról̃ar̃, comfort, joy
oonar̃, bad-luck	ronar̃, good-luck
ouḡat̃, sad	ruḡat̃, merry
oaiḡḡir̃, poor	raiḡḡir̃, rich
oaoi, a fool	raoi, a wise man
oít̃, want, misery	rít̃, peace, plenty
ouḡailce, vice	ruḡailce, virtue
oaoi, condemned, dear	raoi, free, cheap
ooc̃ar̃, harm	rooc̃ar̃, profit
oona, unlucky, unhappy	rona, lucky, happy
oineann, bad weather	roineann, fine weather
oc̃am̃ail, inconvenient	roc̃am̃ail, convenient

## 456.

## Affixes or Terminations.

at̃, when it is the termination of an adjective, means full of, abounding in: b̃mat̃ar̃, a word; b̃mat̃ar̃at̃, wordy, talkative; f̃eup̃at̃, grassy.

ac, when it is the termination of a noun, denotes a person or personal agent: as Éipeannac, an Irishman; Aibéanac, a Scotchman.

ac̑ is an abstract termination, like the English *-ness*: miltir, sweet; miltreac̑, sweetness.

N.B.—The termination -ac̑ is usually added to adjectives.

aiȓe, uiȓe, ȓe, are personal terminations denoting an agent: ȓeunt, a story; ȓeuntuiȓe, a story-teller; coȓ, a foot; coȓiȓe, a pedestrian.

aiȓe, iȓe, are also personal terminations denoting an agent: ceat̑, deceit; ceat̑aiȓe, a deceiver.

am̑at, a termination having the very same force as the English *like* or *ly*: feaȓam̑at, manly; feaȓam̑at, princely, generous.

aȓ, eaȓ, or sometimes ȓ alone, an abstract termination like ac̑: mait̑, good; mait̑eaȓ, goodness; ceann, a head; ceannaȓ, headship, authority.

baȓ and b̑re have a collective force: as, b̑uille, a leaf (of a tree); b̑uilleabaȓ, foliage.

ua, oa, or ta, is an adjectival termination which has usually the force of the English *-like*: m̑oȓua, majestic; óȓua, golden; gal̑ua, exotic, foreign (from gal̑, a stranger, a foreigner).

e is an abstract termination like *áct* or *ar*: whenever it is added to an adjective the resulting abstract noun, owing to the rule "*caol* le *caol*," has the very same form as the *genitive singular feminine of the adjective*: as, *fiat*, generous; *féile*, generosity; *áró*, high; *áiríoe*, height; *geat*, bright; *gíle*, brightness; *áitne*, beauty.

*lać*, *nać*, *pać*, *tać*, *tpać*, have all the same meaning as *áć*, viz., full of, abounding in: *muc*, a pig; *muciać*, a piggery; *coill*, a wood; *coillteać*, a place full of woods; *fuilteać*, bloody; *toilteać* (*toilteannać*), willing.

*már* means *full of, abounding in*: *ceol*, music; *ceol-már*, musical; *speann*, fun; *speannmár*, full of fun, amusing; *ciailmár*, sensible, intelligent.

*óir*, *uóir*, or *tóir*, denotes a *personal agent*: *rpeat*, a scythe; *rpeatla-uóir*, a mower, reaper; *uoir-reóir*, a door-keeper.

### Diminutives.

457. In Irish there are three diminutive terminations, viz., *ín*, *án*, and *óg*. However, *ín* is practically the only diminutive termination in Modern Irish as *án* and *óg* have almost lost their diminutive force. A double diminutive is sometimes met with, as *áró-áinín*, a very little height.

## ín.

458. The termination **ín**, meaning "small" or "little," may be added to almost every Irish noun. Whenever the final consonant is broad it must be made slender (as the **ín** always remains unaltered), the vowels undergoing the same changes as in the formation of the genitive singular, but **Ĉ** is not changed into **Ṣ** (see pars. 60 and 78).

arad, an ass	araitín, a little ass
reap, a man	ripín, a „ man
gorc, a field	guitcín, a „ field
cailleac, an old woman	caillcín, a „ old woman
rráo, a street	rráoin, a „ street, a lane

If the noun ends in **e**, drop the **e** and add **ín**; but if the noun ends in **Δ**, drop the **Δ** and attenuate the preceding consonant; then add **ín**.

páirce páircín nóra nóirín mála máilín

## 459.

## án.

rrután, a brook,	from rput, a stream.
áróán, a hillock,	„ áro, high.
ceatgán, a knitting-needle,	„ ceatg, a thorn.
biorán, a pin,	„ bior, a spit.
leabrán, a booklet,	„ leabar, a book.
geugán, a twig,	„ geug, a branch.
locán, a little lake,	„ loc, a lake.
rgiatán, a wing,	„ rgíat, a shield.

The above are examples of real diminutives, but such examples are not very numerous.



460.

ÓG.

πιαρτός (péirteos), a worm, from πιαρτ, a reptile.

λαρός, a match, „ λαρ, a light.

γαβλός, a little fork, „ γαβαλ, a fork.

These are examples of real diminutives in óg, but such real diminutives are not numerous, as most nouns in óg have practically the same meaning as the nouns from which they were derived (the latter being now generally obsolete): cuiteós, a fly, from cuil, a fly; vpireós, a briar, from vpir, a briar; funnreós, an ash, from funnre, an ash.

In Craig's Grammar we find lucós, a rat (luc, a mouse). This example is a striking instance of the fact that the termination óg is losing (if it has not already lost) its diminutive force.

All derived nouns in óg are feminine.

### Derived Nouns.

461. Words are of three classes—Simple, Derivative, and Compound. All simple words are, as a general rule, monosyllables; they are the roots from which derivative and compound words spring. Derivative words are made up of two or more parts. These parts undergo slight changes when they are united to form words, and thus the component parts are somewhat disguised. The difficulty which presents itself to a student in the spelling of Irish is more apparent than real. The principle of vowel-assimilation is the key to

Irish spelling. Let a student once thoroughly grasp the rules for "caot le caot, &c.," "aspiration," "eclipsis," "attenuation," and "syncope," and immediately all difficulty vanishes.

Derivatives are formed of simple words and particles. The most important of the latter have been already given under the headings "Prefixes" and "Affixes." We will here give some examples of derivative nouns, a careful study of which will enable the student to split up the longest words into their component parts, and thus arrive at their meanings.

462. trom means heavy; tromar, i.e., trom + ar (the abstract termination) means heaviness or weight; éautrom, light, from trom, and the negative particle éa, which eclipses c and t, hence the o; éautromar, lightness, from éa, not; trom, heavy; ar, ness; comtrom, impartial, fair, or just; from com, equal, and trom, heavy; comtromar, impartiality, fairness, &c.; éagcomtrom, partial, unjust; from éa + com + trom; éagcomtromar, partiality, injustice; from éa + com + trom + ar. Spealatóir, a reaper; from rpeat, a scythe, and óir, an affix denoting an agent; the a is put in between the t and o to assist pronunciation: cáiríoe, friends; cáiríoeas, friendliness, friendship; eugcáiríoeas, unfriendliness, hostility: fearamtaact, manliness; from fear + amail + aact: neim-geanamtaact, unamiability; from neim, not + gean, affection + amail + aact: míogact, a

kingdom, from  $\pi\acute{o}\varsigma + \alpha\epsilon\tau$ :  $\kappa\omicron\mu\acute{o}\rho\tau\alpha\rho$ , comparison, emulation, competition; from  $\kappa\omicron$  ( $\kappa\omicron\mu$ ), equal, and  $\mu\acute{o}\rho\tau\alpha\rho$ , greatness, *i.e.*, comparing the greatness of one thing with that of another.

**463.** Compound nouns are formed by the union of two or more simple nouns, or of a noun and an adjective.

(A.) A compound noun formed of two or more nouns, each in the nominative case, has its declension determined by the last noun. Its gender also is that of the last noun, unless the first noun-part be such as requires a different gender. The first word qualifies the second, and the initial consonant of the second is *usually* aspirated.

(B.) If the compound is formed of a noun in the nominative form followed by a genitive noun, the first is the principal noun, and determines the declension and gender; the second qualifies the first, and generally remains unaltered, and the aspiration of the initial consonant in this case depends on the gender of the first noun. See par. 21(f).

We will give here a few examples of the two chief kinds of compound nouns. It is usual to employ a hyphen between the nouns in Class A, but not in Class B.

## 464.

## Class A.

bpeuſ-ſí, a pseudo king	bpeuſ, a lie, and ſí, a king
bun-ſpuť, a fountain	bun, a source, origin, and ſpuť, a stream
cať-baſſ, a helmet	cať, a battle, and baſſ, a top, head
clap-ſolaſ, twilight	
cloiſ-ťeac, a belfry	cloſ, a clock, bell, and ťeac, a house
cpaob-ſleapſ, a garland	cpaob, a branch, and ſleapſ, a wreath
cúl-ťaínt, back-biting	cúl, the back of the head, and ťaínt, talk
caoiſ-ſeoil, mutton	} ſeoil, flesh; caopa, a sheep } laoiſ, a calf; muc, a pig } maſt, a beef
laoiſ-ſeoil, veal	
muc-ſeoil, pork, bacon	
maſt-ſeoil, beef	
lám-ťia, a household god	} lám, a hand; ťia. God; } euťac, a cloth; opo, a } sledge
lám-euťac, a handker- chief, a napkin	
lám-opo, a hand-sledge	
leť-ſgeul,* an excuse	ťeac, a half, and ſgeul, a story
op-ťlac, a sceptre; op, gold; and ſlac, a rod	
ťip-ſſať, patriotism; ťip, country; and ſſať, love	

---

\* ſať mo leť-ſgeul I beg your pardon. (Lit. Accept my excuse).

465.

## Class B.

brac tairc, a winding-sheet (a garment of death).

feap ceol, a musician (a man of music).

feap feara, a seer (a man of knowledge; rior, gen.  
feara).

feap tige, a householder (a man of a house).

mac tige, a wolf (son of (the) country).

cú mair, an otter (a hound of the sea; mair, gen.  
mair).

laog mair, a seal (a calf of the sea).

feap ionaid, a lieutenant, vicegerent (a man of place).

teac órta, an inn, hotel (a house of entertainment).

maigirir rcoile, a schoolmaster (a master of a school).

uð cínce, a hen-egg (an egg of a hen.)

bean ríde or bean t-ríde, a fairy (a woman of the  
ríod, a fairy hill).

466.

## A Noun and an Adjective.

ár-rí, a high king.

ár-tigeairn, a sovereign lord.

ár-réim, supreme power, chief power.

clon-breic, partiality; clon, inclined: and breic, a  
judgment.

cróm-teac, a druidical altar; cróm, bent; and teac,  
a stone, flag.

uadon-breic, condemnation; uadon, condemned.

uadon-óglaic, a bond-slave; óglaic, a servant.

dearbbrátaí (dearb-bbrá- taí), a brother by blood	} dearb, real or true. brátaí and riú, brother and sister (in reli- gion).
deirbbríú, a sister by blood.	

fíon-uirge, spring water: fíon, true, pure; uirge, water.

ḡairb-fíon, a tempest: ḡairb, rough; and fíon, weather.

ḡírr-fíad, a hare: ḡairr, short; and fíad, a deer.

nuad-óime, an upstart: nuad, new, fresh; and óime,  
a person.

rean-atáí, a grandfather,	} rean, old; atáí, a father. mátaí, a mother; aoir, age. reacht, law; olúge is a more common word for law.
rean-rean-atáí (ré-rean- atáí), a great grand- father.	
rean-mátaí, a grand- mother.	
rean-aoir, old age.	
rean-reacht, the old law.	

treun-fear, a brave man.

treun-laoc, a hero.

raor-fealb, a freehold: realb, possession.

tróm-lúge, a nightmare.

uairal-atáí, a patriarch.

raoib-ciall, folly, silliness: raoib, silly; and ciall, sense

fóir-briataí, an adverb: fóir, before; and briataí, a  
word.

fóir-meall, a frontier, extremity; imeall, a border, a  
hem.

fóir-breic, a prejudice (a fore-judgment).

fóir-neart, violence.

fóir-éigean, oppression, compulsion.



### Formation of Adjectives.

467. (a) Adjectives may be formed from many nouns by the addition of  $\Delta\dot{C}$  or  $E\Delta\dot{C}$ , which signifies *full of, abounding in*. All these adjectives belong to the first declension, and are declined like  $\tau\acute{o}\pi\epsilon\alpha\dot{C}$ .

#### NOUN.

$\tau\epsilon\alpha\rho\varsigma$ , anger  
 $\tau\rho\acute{\upsilon}\tau$ , blood  
 $\tau\epsilon\upsilon\rho$ , grass  
 $\beta\upsilon\alpha\iota\tau\acute{o}$ , victory  
 $\beta\rho\epsilon\upsilon\varsigma$ , a lie  
 $\tau\acute{o}\iota\epsilon\alpha\lambda\lambda$ , one's best endeavour  
 your

$\tau\epsilon\alpha\rho\alpha\mu$ , standing  
 $\gamma\eta\acute{o}$ , work  
 $\kappa\lambda\acute{\upsilon}$ , fame  
 $\tau\alpha\omicron\tau\alpha\rho$ , toil  
 $\lambda\acute{\upsilon}\beta$ , a loop  
 $\tau\alpha\omicron\gamma\alpha\tau$ , life  
 $\tau\acute{\alpha}\tau$ , sufficiency  
 $\Delta\iota\beta\alpha$ , Scotland  
 $\Sigma\alpha\kappa\rho\alpha\iota\mu$ , England  
 $\kappa\rho\alpha\upsilon\beta$ , branch  
 $\kappa\alpha\rho\rho\alpha\iota\varsigma$ , a rock  
 $\beta\rho\acute{o}\nu$ , sorrow  
 $\tau\alpha\iota$ , dirt  
 $\tau\rho\acute{o}\rho$ , knowledge  
 $\acute{\alpha}\tau\alpha\rho$ , joy  
 $\tau\omicron\iota\lambda\gamma\acute{o}\rho$ , sorrow

#### ADJECTIVE.

$\tau\epsilon\alpha\rho\varsigma\Delta\dot{C}$ , angry  
 $\tau\rho\acute{\upsilon}\tau\epsilon\alpha\dot{C}$ , bloody  
 $\tau\epsilon\upsilon\rho\Delta\dot{C}$ , grassy  
 $\beta\upsilon\alpha\tau\Delta\dot{C}$ , victorious  
 $\beta\rho\epsilon\upsilon\varsigma\Delta\dot{C}$ , false, lying  
 $\tau\acute{o}\iota\epsilon\alpha\lambda\lambda\Delta\dot{C}$ , energetic

$\tau\epsilon\alpha\rho\mu\Delta\dot{C}$ , steadfast  
 $\gamma\eta\acute{o}\tau\Delta\dot{C}$ , busy  
 $\kappa\lambda\acute{\upsilon}\tau\epsilon\alpha\dot{C}$ , famous  
 $\tau\alpha\omicron\tau\rho\Delta\dot{C}$ , industrious  
 $\lambda\acute{\upsilon}\beta\Delta\dot{C}$ , deceitful  
 $\tau\alpha\omicron\gamma\lambda\Delta\dot{C}$ , long-lived  
 $\tau\acute{\alpha}\tau\Delta\dot{C}$ , satiated  
 $\Delta\iota\beta\alpha\mu\Delta\dot{C}$ , Scotch  
 $\Sigma\alpha\kappa\rho\alpha\mu\Delta\dot{C}$ , English  
 $\kappa\rho\alpha\upsilon\beta\Delta\dot{C}$ , branchy  
 $\kappa\alpha\rho\gamma\epsilon\alpha\dot{C}$ , rocky  
 $\beta\rho\acute{o}\nu\Delta\dot{C}$ , sorrowful  
 $\tau\alpha\iota\Delta\dot{C}$ , dirty  
 $\tau\rho\acute{o}\rho\Delta\dot{C}$ , intelligent  
 $\acute{\alpha}\tau\alpha\rho\Delta\dot{C}$ , joyous  
 $\tau\omicron\iota\lambda\gamma\acute{o}\rho\Delta\dot{C}$ , sorrowful



## NOUN.

cleap, a trick  
 cuirpre, weariness  
 uirge, water  
 neut, a cloud  
 leanb, a child  
 gaot, wind  
 imnirde, anxiety  
 cumact, power  
 peult, a star  
 aipe, care  
 roigir, patience  
 eagla, fear  
 toit, a will  
 cupam, heed  
 iomarca, too much

## ADJECTIVE.

cleapac, tricky  
 cuirpreac, weary  
 uirgeac, watery  
 neutac, cloudy  
 leanbac, childish  
 gaotac, windy  
 imnirdeac, anxious  
 cumactac, powerful  
 peultac, starry  
 aipeac, attentive  
 roigirdeac, patient  
 eaglac, timid  
 toitceanac, willing  
 cupamac, careful  
 iomarcaac, excessive,  
 copious

(b). Many adjectives are formed by adding *mAR* to nouns.

All these adjectives belong to the first declension and are declined like *mór*.

## NOUN.

áo, luck  
 ceol, music  
 ciatl, sense  
 feup, grass  
 feoil, flesh  
 fonn, fancy

## ADJECTIVE.

áomhar, lucky.  
 ceolmhar, musical  
 ciatlmhar, sensible  
 feupmhar, grassy  
 feolmhar, fleshy  
 fonnmhar, desirous

## NOUN.

glóir, glory  
 speann, fun  
 luac, price, value  
 líon, number  
 neart, strength  
 ríad, a shadow  
 lúit, activity

## ADJECTIVE.

glóiríam, glorious  
 speannmíam, funny  
 luacmíam, valuable  
 líonmíam, numerous  
 neartmíam, powerful  
 ríadmíam, shy, startled  
 lúitmíam, active, nimble

(c). Very many adjectives are formed from nouns by the addition of **áimíal** or **eáimíal** (both pronounced oo-il or u-wil). All these adjectives belong to the third declension.

## NOUN.

fear, a man  
 bean, a woman  
 flait, a prince  
 ainm, a name  
 meap, esteem  
 lá (pl. laete), a day  
 gráin, hatred  
 caird (pl. cáirde), a friend  
 namí (pl. náimíde), an enemy  
 croíde, a heart  
 rí (gen. ríog), a king  
 caoi (pl. caoite), a way  
 ríam, order  
 sean, affection  
 mod, manner

## ADJECTIVE.

fearamíal, manly  
 beanamíal, womanly  
 flaitreamíal, generous  
 ainmeamíal, renowned  
 mearamíal, estimable  
 laetreamíal, daily  
 gráineamíal, hateful  
 cáirdeamíal, friendly  
 náimídeamíal, hostile  
 croídeamíal, hearty, gay  
 ríogamíal, kingly, royal  
 caoiteamíal, opportune  
 ríaramíal, subject, docile  
 obedient  
 seanamíal, affectionate  
 modamíal, mannerly

## NOUN.

cír (pl. cíorṫa), country

meirneac, }  
mírneac, } courage

ceime (pl. ceinte), fire

rliab, (pl. rléibte), a mountain

speann, fun

eun, a bird

comurra, a neighbour

barántar, authority

## ADJECTIVE.

cíorṫamái, country-like,  
homely, social

mírneamái, courageous

ceinteamái, fiery, igneous

rléibteamái, mountain-  
ous

speannamái, funny, gay

eunamái, bird-like, airy

comurramái, neighbourly

barántamái, authentic

(d). There is a fourth class of adjectives formed by the termination ṫa (ṫa); but it is not as large as the three preceding classes. The following are some of the principal ones :—

ṫiaṫa, godly, divine

reapṫa, masculine

banṫa, feminine

órpṫa, golden, gilt

laocṫa, heroic

reanṫa, ancient

ṫaona (ṫaonṫa) human

ṫránṫa, ugly

cópṫa, brave

beoṫa, lively

ṫallṫa, exotic or foreign

naomṫa (naomṫa), holy  
saintly

Compound adjectives are extremely common in Irish, being usually formed by the union of two or more simple adjectives (sometimes of a noun and an

adjective); but these compound adjectives present no difficulty once the simple adjectives have been mastered.

## FORMATION OF VERBS

**468.** Verbs can be readily formed from nouns and adjectives by the addition of *is* or *uis*. The addition of this termination is sometimes accompanied by syncope, which often necessitates slight vowel changes in accordance with the rule “*caol te caol*.”

### **469. (a).** Verbs derived from Nouns.

NOUN.	VERB (Stem).
<i>ainm</i> , a name	<i>ainmnis</i> , name
<i>beatha</i> , life	<i>beathuis</i> , nourish
<i>cuirne</i> , memory	<i>cuirnis</i> , remember
<i>cuid</i> , a part	<i>cuidis le</i> , assist (take part with)
<i>cúl</i> , the back of the head	<i>cúluis</i> , retire
<i>raoṁa</i> , exertion	<i>raoṁuis</i> , exert
<i>cuairt</i> , a visit	<i>cuairtuis</i> , visit, search
<i>leap</i> , improvement	<i>leapuis</i> , improve
<i>neart</i> , strength	<i>neartuis</i> , strengthen
<i>decret</i> , a decree	<i>decretuis</i> , decree, enact
<i>báir</i> , death	<i>báiruis</i> , put to death
<i>cat</i> , a battle	<i>catuis</i> , contend, fight
<i>céim</i> , a step	<i>céimnis</i> , step, advance
<i>crioṁ</i> , an end	<i>crioṁnais</i> , finish
<i>cruṁ</i> , a trembling	<i>cruṁnais</i> , tremble

## NOUN.

ζορτα, hunger, injury  
 ιομασ, multitude  
 ορσ, an order  
 ρολυρ, a light  
 τυρ (τορ), a beginning  
 τρεοιρ, a guide  
 ριαν, pain  
 οβαιρ, work

## VERB (Stem).

ζορτσιγ, injure  
 ιομαστσιγ, multiply  
 ορστσιγ, order, command  
 ροιλλιγ, enlighten  
 τορτσιγ, begin  
 τρεορτσιγ, guide, lead  
 ριαντσιγ, cause pain  
 οιβριγ, work

## (b). Verbs derived from Adjectives.

## ADJECTIVE.

αρσ, high  
 βαν, white  
 ουβ, black  
 βοθαρ, deaf  
 βυαν, lasting  
 ροιλλιρ, apparent  
 ρυαρ, cold  
 λαγ, weak  
 ρταν, well  
 τιρμ, dry  
 βοετ, poor  
 цеарт, right  
 мин, fine  
 ιριот, low  
 унѣт, humble  
 ραισθιρ, rich

## VERB (Stem).

αρτσιγ, raise  
 βαντσιγ, whiten  
 ουβτσιγ, blacken  
 βοθρτσιγ, deafen, bother  
 βυαντσιγ, preserve  
 ροιλλιρτσιγ, reveal, show  
 ρυαρτσιγ, cool, chill  
 λαγτσιγ, weaken  
 ρταντσιγ, make well, cure  
 τιορμτσιγ, or τιρμτσιγ, dry  
 βοεττσιγ, impoverish  
 цеартτσιγ, correct  
 минτσιγ, make fine, *explain*  
 ιριγ, lower  
 унѣтτσιγ, humble  
 ραισθριγ, enrich

The compound verbs are very few, and are therefore of little consequence to the beginner.

### **PART III.—SYNTAX.**

#### **CHAPTER I.**

##### **The Article.**

**470.** In Irish the article always precedes its noun, and agrees with it in gender, number and case as, *an fear*, the man; *na fir*, the men; *an fír*, of the man; *na mná*, of the woman.

**471.** When one noun governs another in the genitive case the article cannot be used with the first noun: as, *mac an fír*, the son of the man; *fear an tíge*, the man of the house, &c.

Notice the difference between *the son of the man*, *mac an fír*, and *a son of the man*, *mac do'n fear*.

**Exceptions.** (1) When a demonstrative adjective is used with the first noun (the governing one), the article must also be used; as, *tá an teach sin mo cara le díol*, that house of my friend's is for sale.

(2) If the two nouns form a compound word, the article is used before the first, if used in English: a newspaper, *páipeir nuairéacra*; but, the newspaper, *an páipeir nuairéacra*.



(3) When the noun in the genitive case is an indefinite\* one, *which denotes a part of something, the material of which a thing is made, or the contents of the first noun*, the article is used with the first noun when it is used in English :—

an speim aráin, the piece of bread.

an mála mine, the bag of meal.

an crúirgín uirge, the little jug of water.

We say *blar aráin*, for, the taste of bread ; *bolat éirg*, the smell of fish ; *mac ríog*, the son of a king ; because if the noun in the genitive expresses quality, connection, or origin, the governing noun does not take the article.

**472.** If a nominative be followed by several genitives the article can be used only with the last (if “the” be used in English), as, *crúime éinn an capall*, the weight of the horse’s head.

The article is often omitted before a noun which is antecedent to a relative clause ; as, *Is é sinne do bhallann*. He is the person who was there.

**473.** In the following cases the definite article is frequently used in Irish though not used in English.

(1) Before surnames, when not preceded by a Christian name, as, *Raib an Uíeachaí ann?* Was Walsh there?

---

\* See par. 585.



(2) **Before the names of some countries, as,** *an Spáinn*, Spain; *an Fhrainc*, France; *rí na h-Éireann*, the king of Ireland: also before Rome, *'r an Róim*, in Rome; *ó'n Róim*, from Rome. The article is not used before the names of Ireland, England or Scotland in the nominative and dative cases.

(3) **Before abstract nouns:** *an t-ocpar*, hunger. *Is maí an t-annlann an t-ocpar*. Hunger is a good sauce.

We frequently use *an báir* for "death."

The article is not used in such sentences, as:—

*Tá ocpar orm*. I am hungry.

(4) **Before nouns qualified by the demonstrative adjectives:** *an fear sin*, that man; *an bean seo*, this woman.

(5) **Before adjectives used as nouns:**

*an maí agus an t-olc*, goodness and badness.

*Is fearr liom an glár ná an dearg*. I prefer green to red.

(6) **After "Cé" meaning "which" or "what."**

*Cé an fear?* Which man?

*Cé an leabhar?* What book?

(7) **To translate "apiece," "per" or "a" before words expressing weight and measure;**

*Raol an ceann*. Sixpence apiece.

In speaking of *a period of time* *ra* (*in* *an*) is used: as, *uair ra mbliadain*, once a year.

(8). Before titles :

Δη τ-α-ε-ι-ν Εοζαν υα Σπαμνα. Father Eugene  
O'Growney.

Δη τ-ατ-αιρ πεαταρ υα λαογαρε. Father Peter  
O'Leary.

An doctúir Dhubglar De n-Íoe. Dr. Douglas Hyde.

(9) To express any attribute:

Δ θέαν να ὀτρῖς μῆδ. O woman of three cows.

(10) The article is used before the word denoting the use to which a thing is put, or the place where a thing is found or produced.

μαλα να mine. The meal bag, *i.e.*, the bag for hold-  
ing meal.

Cuirgín an uirge. The water-jug.

Compare these with the following :—

An m&ls mine. The bag of meal.

An crúirín uirge. The jug of water.

(11) Before the word "uite" meaning "every."

An uile fear. Every man.

An utile tip. Every country.

(12) Whenever an indefinite noun, accompanied by an adjective is predicated of a pronoun by means of the verb *is*, the definite article must be used with the noun whenever the adjective is placed immediately after the verb.

1r breáḡ an lá é. It is a fine day.

1r ma1t an fear tú. You are a good man.

(13) Before the names of seasons, months, days of the week (when not preceded by the word *de*).

An é an Satharn atá agáinn? Is to-day Saturday?

An iníu an luán? } Is this Monday?  
An é seo an luán?

Iníu an Aome. To-day is Friday.

## CHAPTER II

### The Noun.

474. In Irish one noun governs another in the genitive case, and the governed noun comes after the governing one.

Ceann an capall. The horse's head.

The noun, *capall*, in the genitive case is aspirated by the article because it is masculine gender. It would not be aspirated if it were feminine. (See par. 40.)

475. When the governed noun in the genitive is a proper name it is generally aspirated, whether it be masculine or feminine, although the article is not used.

peann mairé. Mary's pen.

leabhar Seagáin. John's book.

The last rule is by no means generally true of *place names*.

**476.** When the noun in genitive case has the force of an adjective, it is not preceded by the article, but its initial consonant is subject to precisely the same rules, with regard to aspiration and eclipsis, as if it were a simple adjective, *i.e.*, it is aspirated if the governing noun be nominative or accusative singular feminine, or genitive singular masculine. It is eclipsed if the governing noun be in the genitive plural.

uð cínce, a hen-egg (an egg of a hen)

uibe cínce, of a hen-egg.

féar ceoil, a musician.

fir ceoil, of a musician.

na bféar sceoil, of the musicians.

**477.** Apposition has almost entirely disappeared in modern Irish, the second noun being now usually in the nominative case, no matter what the case of the first may be.

**478.** A noun used adjectively in English is translated into Irish by the genitive case.

A gold ring, fáinne óir (lit. a ring of gold).

A hen-egg, uð cínce.

Oatmeal, mín cóirce.

**479.** Collective nouns (except in their own plurals) always take the article and qualifying adjectives in the singular; they *sometimes* take a plural pronoun, and may take a plural verb.

Ċáŋgadhár an buidéan cupadh rin do láthair fínn ašur  
do beannuiš riadh do. That company of warriors  
came into the presence of Finn, and saluted him  
(lit. to him).

**480. Nouns denoting fulness or a part of anything**  
are usually followed by the preposition *de* and the  
dative case, but the genitive is also used.

ceann (or gadhár) o'ár nğadhraib, one of our hounds.  
bárr mo b'róige, the top of my shoe.  
lán mo buirín, the full of my fist.

In phrases such as "some of us," "one of them,"  
&c., "of us," "of them," &c., are usually translated  
by *ašainn*, *aca*, &c.; but *oínn*, *oíob*, &c., may also be  
used.

**481. The personal numerals** from *oíar* to *oárneug*  
inclusive (see par. 177) generally take their nouns  
in the **genitive plural**: *beirt mac*, two sons; *naonbhar*  
*feár*, nine men (lit. two of sons, nine of men).

*A tríúr mac ašur a tríúr ban.*

His three sons and their three wives.

**482. When used partitively** they take *de* with the  
dative.

*Bádh ré naonbhar oíob fá 'n loč.*

He drowned nine of them under the lake.

*Naoi naonbhar de máoraiš na h-Éireann.*

Nine times nine of the stewards of Erin.

### Personal Nouns.

**483.** An Irish name consists of two parts, the *ainm-bairrit* (or simply *ainm*), which corresponds to the English Christian name, and the *rioinneas*, the surname or family name.

Surnames were first used in Ireland about the eleventh century; until that time every Irish personal name was significant, and sometimes rendered more so by the application of some epithet. "In the early ages individuals received their names from epithets implying some personal peculiarity, such as colour of hair, complexion, size, figure, certain accidents of deformity, mental qualities, such as bravery, fierceness, &c." Joyce's "Irish Names of Places."

**484.** When the Christian name is used in addressing a person, it is always in the vocative case, and preceded by the particle *á*, which causes aspiration, *e.g.* :

*Fan liom, á Seagáin.* Wait for me, John.

*Dia duit, á Seumair.* Good morning, James.

**485.** When the Christian name is in the genitive case, it is aspirated, *e.g.* :

*Leabhar Máire.* Mary's book.

*Sgian Seoirre.* George's knife.

**486.** Surnames when not preceded by a Christian name usually take the termination *Ó*, which has the force of a patronymic (or father-name), and are declined like *mairead* (par. 57). They are usually preceded by the article except in the vocative case: *an ríog Ó*, Power; *capall an úrthaidh*, O'Brien's horse



Two forms are admissible in the vocative case; facility of pronunciation is the best guide, *e.g.*, *Ṣab i leit, a ṽpmanaiḡ*. Come here, O'Brien. *a míc uí laoḡairé*, O'Leary. *a míc uí Suibne*, MacSweeney.

487. Surnames occurring in Ireland to-day are of three classes: (1) Surnames of Gaelic origin. These in almost every instance have the prefix *Ó* (*ua*) or *Mac* for a male, and *ní* or *níc* for a female. (2) Surnames of old foreign origin. The majority of these have no prefix. (3) Surnames of late foreign origin. Only a few of these have acquired a distinct form, pronounced in an Irish way.

488. When the surname is preceded by any of the words *Ó* (*ua*), *Mac*, *ní*, *níc*, the surname is in the genitive case, and is aspirated after *ní* or *níc*, but not after *Ó* or *Mac*: *e.g.*, *Seagán Mac Domnaill*, John McDonnell; *máire ní Conaill*, Mary O'Connell; *Diarmuid Ó Conaill*, Dermot O'Connell; *nóra níc Domnaill*, Nora McDonnell.

489. When the whole name is in the genitive case, the words after *uí* (gen. of *Ó* or *ua*) and *míc* (gen. of *Mac*) are aspirated; *ní* and *níc* do not change in genitive. *leabair Seumair uí ṽpman*, James O'Brien's book; *bó ṽpman míc Domnaill*, Brian McDonnell's cow.

490. *Mac* and *Ó* aspirate when they really mean "son" and "grandson" respectively.



MAC DÓMHAILL, Donal's son.

MAC DÓMHAILL, McDonnell.

Ó BÉRIAIN, Brian's grandson.

Ó BÉRIAIN, O'Brien.

491. Some surnames take the article after MAC and NIC—*e.g.*:

SEUMAR MAC AN BÁIRIO, James Ward.

NÓRA NIC AN ULTAIGH, Nora McNulty.

## CHAPTER III.

### The Adjective.

492. An adjective may be used either **predicatively** or **attributively**. An adjective is used *predicatively* when it is predicated of a noun by a verb, and in this case it is *usually* separated from the noun by the verb. "The way was *long*, the wind was *cold*." "The day is *fine*." "He made the mantles *green*." "Long," "cold," "fine," and "green" are used *predicatively*. An adjective is used *attributively* whenever it is not separated from the noun by the verb, and is not predicated of a noun by a verb: as, "The *infirm* *old* minstrel went wearily along." "He made the *green* mantles." The adjectives "*infirm*," "*old*," and "*green*" are here used *attributively*.

**493.** In Irish almost every common adjective can be used both predicatively and attributively. There are, however, one or two **exceptions**: *ṛpoč*, bad, and *ṛeağ*, good, can *never* be used predicatively. If "bad" or "good" be used predicatively in the English sentence, we must use *otc*, bad, or *maic*, good, in Irish. Never say or write *ṛ ṛeağ é* for "he is good," but *ṛ maic é*, &c.

The adjective *iomṛa* is always used predicatively with *ṛ*. In Munster *'mó* is used instead of *iomṛa*.

*ṛ iomṛa maicac do ġab an tṛiğe reo.*

(*'Tis*) many a rider (that) has gone this way.

## ADJECTIVE USED ATTRIBUTIVELY.

### (a) The Position of the Adjective.

**494.** As a general rule the adjective follows its noun in Irish: as, *teabap mór*, a big book; *reap maic*, a good man.

**Exceptions.** (1) A numeral adjective, whether ordinal or cardinal, when it consists of one word, always precedes its noun: as *tṛi ba*, three cows; *ṛa ċirc*, two hens. The *interrogative*, *possessive*, and most of the *indefinite adjectives* also precede their noun.

(2) Monosyllabic adjectives are frequently placed before the noun, but then the noun and adjective form a compound noun, and consequently the initial of the noun is aspirated, when possible. This is

always the case with adjectives: *deas*, good; *ōroō*, bad; *rean*, old; and frequently with *nuadō*, new; and *riop*, true. In this position the form of the adjectives never changes for number or case, but it is subject to the very same initial changes as if it were a noun.

*rean-ḡear*, an old man; *rean-ḡir*, old men.

*treun-ḡear*, a brave man; *āro-ḡí*, a high king.

*an trean-bean*, the old woman;

*lām an trean-ḡir*, the hand of the old man.

(3) When a name consists of two words the adjective frequently comes between them: as, "*Sliaō ḡeat ḡCua*," "the bright Slieve Gua."

### (b) Agreement of the Adjective.

When an adjective is used attributively and follows its noun, it agrees with the noun in gender, number, and case: as, *bean ḡōir*, a big woman; *mac an ḡir ḡōir*, the son of the big man; *na ḡir ḡōira*, the big men.

For the aspiration and eclipsis of the adjective see par. 149.

495. Since the adjective in English has no inflexion for gender, it is quite a common thing to have one adjective qualifying two or more nouns of different genders. Sometimes in Irish we meet with one adjective qualifying two nouns of different genders or numbers; in such cases the adjective follows the

latter noun, and agrees with it alone. However, the more usual method is to use the adjective after each noun: as,

բար մալտ ասր ըսն մալտ.

A good man and woman.

## ADJECTIVE USED PREDICATIVELY.

### (a) Position of the Adjective.

**496.** An adjective used predicatively always follows its noun, except when it is predicated by means of the verb **ԻՏ**, in any of its forms, expressed or understood.

The men are good, Ե՛կ նա բար մալտ.

The day is fine, Ե՛կ ան Լ՛կ իմե՛կ.

If the verb **ԻՐ** be used in these sentences, notice the position of the adjective and the use of the pronoun.

The men are good, ԻՐ մալտ նա բար ԼԵՐ.

The day is fine, ԻՐ իմե՛կ ան Լ՛կ Է.

### (b) Agreement of the Adjective.

An adjective used predicatively never agrees with its noun in either gender, number, or case: in other words, *the simple form of the adjective is always used*.

Moreover, it is never aspirated nor eclipsed by the noun.

**497.** When the adjective comes immediately after the Past Tense or Conditional of **ԻՐ** (*i.e.*, **ԵՅ** or **ԵՅՕ**),

its initial is generally aspirated, when possible; but in this case it is not the noun which causes aspiration.

Óa bpreáḡ an lá é. It was a fine day.

**498.** Notice the difference in meaning between the following:—

Rinne ré na rḡeana ḡeupá He made the sharp knives.

Rinne ré ḡeup na rḡeana }  
Rinne ré na rḡeana ḡeup } He made the knives sharp.

Ṭá an bó mór ouḃ. The big cow is black.

Ṭá an bó ouḃ mór. The black cow is big.

Ṭá an oirḡce dorḡá fluc. The night is dark and wet.

Ṭá an oirḡce fluc dorḡá. The wet night is dark.

**499.** Adjectives denoting fulness or a part of anything are usually followed by *ve* with the dative case:

full of milk, lán *ve* bainne.

two barrels full of water, óá bapáile lán *o'* uirḡe.

## NUMERAL ADJECTIVES.

### Position of the Words.

**500.** A numeral adjective, whether ordinal or cardinal, when it consists of one word, goes before the noun.

ceirḡe capáill, four horses; ré caoirḡḡ, six sheep.

an ceurḡ buacáill, the first boy.

The words for 40, 60, 80, 200, 300, &c., also precede their nouns.

**501. A numeral adjective, except those just mentioned, consisting of two or more words, takes its noun immediately after the first part of the numeral:**  
as,

ceitíre capaill deug, fourteen horses.

da uan deug, twelve lambs.

da buin deug ir trí ficí, seventy-two cows.

**502. When we wish to express large numbers in Irish, we may either place the unit digit first, then the tens, next the hundreds, and so on; or we may express them in the English order. Convenience for utterance and clearness of sense are the best guides in any particular case.**

**The word AGUS is generally used with the larger numbers CÉAD, míle, etc., and IS with the smaller ones.**

129 miles, céad (míle) agus naoi míle ficíad.

79 horses, naoi gcapaill déag ir trí ficí.

5,635 men, cúig míle agus ré céad fear agus cúig  
fir déag ar ficí.

356 sheep, ré caoirí déag ir da ficí agus (ar)  
trí céad.

1,666 years, ré bliadhna ir trí ficí agus (ar) ré  
céad agus (ar) míle.

519 A.D., daoir do'n tigeapna cúig céad agus naoi  
déag.

52,000 of the Roman army, da míle déag ir da  
ficí míle de fluaḡ Rómánac.



**More** than 400 years, tuille(Δὺ) (ὅπερ) ἄγῡρ  
ceitpe céao bliadain.

**About** 80, tuairim le (or timcheall le) ceitpe ríao.

„ ἦ „ „ ἦ „ „ „

The word rúge is often added to make it clear that *miles* not thousands is meant. Sé míle rúge, or ré míle [oe] rúge, *six miles*.

**503.** The initials of the numerals undergo the very same changes with regard to aspiration and eclipsis as a noun would in the same position.

**504.** The article prefixes τ to ἀοημάδ, first, and to οὐτμάδ, eighth, whether the following noun be masculine or feminine: as,

an τ-οὐτμάδ ὄεαν, the eighth woman.

#### Initial Changes produced by the Numerals.

**505.** Ἀοη, one; ὡά, two; ceuo, first; and tpeap, third, aspirate the initial of the following word: as,

Δοη ὀό ἀμάιν, one cow; an ceuo tpeap, the first man.

**506.** Δοη, prefixes τ to the letter ρ; but has no effect on υ or τ: Δοη ἀρὰ ἀμάιν, one ass; Δοη ὀρ ἀμάιν, one foot; Δοη τρᾶγαρτ ἀμάιν, one priest; Δοη τρῖατ ἀμάιν, one rod; Δοη τρεῶατ ἀμάιν, one hawk; ὡά tpeῶατ, two hawks; Δοη ταῶ ἀμάιν, one side.

**507.** Σεᾶτ, seven; οὐτ, eight; ναοι, nine; and οεῖτ, ten; and their compounds eclipse the initial



of the following noun and prefix *n* to vowels; *ṛeāct mba*, seven cows; *ṛeic n-uḃla*, ten apples.

508. *Ṭrí*, *ceitṛe*, *cúis* and *ré* have usually no effect on consonants (except *ceuro*, 100, and *míle*, 1000); but *ṛrí*, *ceitṛe*, *ré*, and *ṛara* prefix *n* to vowels: as, *ṛrí ba*, three cows; *ṛrí n-araib*, three asses; *ré n-uḃla*, six apples; *'ran ṛara n-ait*, in the second place; *ṛrí ceuro*, 300; *ceitṛe míle*, 4000.

*Ṭrí*, *ceitṛe*, *cúis* and *ré* (as well as *ṛeāct*, *oēt*, &c.), cause eclipsis in the genitive plural: *a ṽean na ṛṛí mḃó*. *O woman of three cows!* *luāc ceitṛe bpúnt* *four pound's worth*.

#### The Number of the Noun after the Numerals.

509. The noun after *don* is always in the singular, even in such numbers as 11, 21, 31, 41, &c. The other numerals (except *ṛá*) may take the singular number when unity of idea is expressed: *e.g.*, *don uḃall ṽeās*, *eleven apples*; *ṽeamas ré ar na ṛrí buille 'bualas*. *He forgot to strike the three blows*.

510. When a noun has two forms in the plural, a short form and a long one, the short form is preferred after the numerals: as

*naoi n-uairpe*, nine times; not *naoi n-uairpeannṛa*.

511. In Modern Irish the numerals *ṛice*, 20; *ṛá ṛicro*, 40, &c., *ceuro*, 100; *míle*, 1,000, are regarded as simple numeral adjectives which take the noun after them in the singular number.

**512.** This peculiar construction has arisen from the fact that these numerals are really *nouns*, and formerly governed the nouns after them in the *genitive plural*. As the genitive plural of most Irish nouns has exactly the same form as the nominative singular, the singular form has come to be almost universally used in Modern Irish after these numerals. Formerly they would use *ceud ban* and *ficthe caora*, but now we use *ceud bean* and *ficthe caora*.

**513.** The word *ceann* and its plural *cinn* are often used with numerals *when the noun is not expressed in English*: as, *Ca mhéud (an'mó) leabhar aḡat?* *Tá ós ceann deug aḡam.* How many books have you? I have twelve.

*Tá ceann (or duine) aca inḡ an tíḡ.*

There is one of them in the house.

### The Dual Number.

**514.** *Óa*, "two," always takes the noun after it in the dual number (neither singular nor plural), which in every Irish noun has the same form as the dative singular. This does not at all imply that the noun after *óa* is in the dative case. It is in the *dative singular form*, but it may be in any of the five cases, according to its use in the sentence. All the cases of the dual number are alike, but the form of the genitive plural is often used for the genitive dual: *óa buin*, two cows; *óa ḡabainn*, two smiths; *lán a óa lámh* or *lán a óa lámh*, the full of his two hands.

**515.** The article which qualifies a noun in the dual number will always be in the singular form.

**516.** The adjective which qualifies a noun in the dual number will be in the plural form, but really in the dual number; the pronouns belonging to the noun will be in the plural form; and the verb may, but need not be; because in these parts of speech the dual number and the plural number have the same forms.

**517.** The initial of an adjective\* qualifying and agreeing with a noun in the dual number will be aspirated, no matter what the gender or case of the noun may be: as,

ဝါ တိၚ ဝေၚ,                      twelve houses.

၁၁ ဝါ လၢၤ ဝါၤ,                      the two white hands.

လၢၤ ၁ ဝါ လၢၤ ဝေၚ,              the full of her two little hands.

**518.** The ဝ of ဝါ is usually aspirated, except after words ending in ဝ, ဂ, င, ဖ, ဖ (dentals), or after the possessive adjective ၁, her.

၁ ဝါ ငဝ် ဝေၚ,                      her two little feet.

---

\* Except demonstrative, possessive, indefinite, and interrogative adjectives.

### The Possessive Adjective.

**519.** A possessive adjective can never be used without a noun: as, her father and his,  $\Delta$   $n$ - $\Delta\tau\alpha\iota\eta$   $\Delta\gamma\upsilon\rho$   $\Delta$   $\Delta\tau\alpha\iota\eta$ .

**520.** The possessive adjectives always precede their nouns: as, mo  $m\acute{\alpha}\tau\alpha\iota\eta$ , my mother.

**521.** The possessives mo, my;  $\tau\omicron$ , thy; and  $\Delta$ , his, aspirate the initial of their nouns;  $\acute{\alpha}\eta$ , our;  $\upsilon\eta$ , your; and  $\Delta$ , their, cause eclipsis: as,  $\Delta$   $\tau\acute{\alpha}\eta$ , his poem;  $\tau\omicron$   $m\acute{\alpha}\tau\alpha\iota\eta$ , thy mother;  $\Delta$   $\tau\acute{\alpha}\eta$ , her poem;  $\Delta$   $n\tau\acute{\alpha}\eta$ , their poem.

**522.** If a noun begins with a vowel, mo, my, and  $\tau\omicron$ , thy, become m' and  $\tau'$  ( $\tau$  or  $\epsilon$ );  $\Delta$ , his, has no effect;  $\Delta$ , her, prefixes  $n$ ; and  $\Delta$ , their, prefixes  $n$ ;  $\acute{\alpha}\eta$ , our, and  $\upsilon\eta$ , your, also prefix  $n$  to vowels: as,  $\Delta$   $\Delta\tau\alpha\iota\eta$ , his father;  $\Delta$   $n$ - $\Delta\tau\alpha\iota\eta$ , her father;  $\Delta$   $n$ - $\Delta\tau\alpha\iota\eta$ , their father;  $m'\eta\epsilon\alpha\eta$ , my husband;  $\tau'e\upsilon\eta$ , your bird;  $\acute{\alpha}\eta$   $n$ - $\acute{\alpha}\rho\acute{\alpha}\eta$   $\tau\alpha\epsilon\tau\epsilon\alpha\mu\alpha\iota$ , our daily bread;  $\upsilon\eta$   $n$ - $\acute{\alpha}\theta\eta\eta$ , your song.

**523.** The possessive adjectives, when compounded with prepositions (see par. 186), have the same influence over the initials of their nouns as they have in their uncompounded state: as,  $\tau\omicron\omicron m$   $m\acute{\alpha}\tau\alpha\iota\eta$ , to my mother;  $\omicron m$   $\epsilon\iota\eta$ , from my country.

**524.** When the portion of a thing which belongs to one or more persons is to be expressed by the possessive adjectives, the name of the thing is preceded by *curo*, with the possessive adjective before it. The name of the thing is in the genitive case—genitive singular if *quantity* be implied, but genitive plural if *number*—as, my bread, *mo curo aráin* (lit. my share of bread); his wine, *a curo fíona*; their horses, *a gcuro capall*.

This rule is not always followed; for instance, we sometimes find *m'fíon*, my wine; but *mo curo fíona* is more idiomatic.

**525.** The word *curo* is never used in this way before the name of a single object.

*mo leabhar*, my book; *a gcapall*, their horse.

*a leabhar*, his book; but *a curo leabhar*, his books.

*a bó*, her cow; *a curo bó*, her cows.

**526.** The word *curo* is not used in such phrases as *mo cora*, my feet; *mo rúite*, my eyes; *a cnáma*, his bones, &c.

**527.** When the emphatic suffix is used, some make it follow *curo*; others make it follow the noun: as, *mo curo-re aráin* or *mo curo aráin-re*.

## CHAPTER IV.

## THE PRONOUN.

## Personal Pronoun.

**528** The personal pronouns agree with the nouns for which they stand in gender, number and person: as, He is a big man. *1r mór an fear é.* They are big men. *1r mór na fir iad.*

**529.** A personal pronoun which stands for a noun the gender of which is different from its sex, agrees in gender with the sex of the noun; as, *1r maic an cailín í.* She is a good girl. *1r otc an comuinn é.* He is a bad neighbour.

**530.** In Irish we have no neuter pronoun corresponding to the English "it;" hence, in translating "it," we must determine the gender of the Irish noun (masculine or feminine) and then use *ré* (he) or *rí* (she) accordingly:\* as, It is terrible weather. *1r caillte an aimsir í.* Is to-day Friday? *An í an Doine atá agam?* 'Tob í an fírinne í. It was the truth. *Tá an carúr agam, ní fuil ré tim.* I have the hammer, it is not heavy.

---

\* The word *áit* although feminine takes sometimes a masculine pronoun, as, *1r fear an áit é.* It is a nice place.

Notice also—

*1r é* }  
     or } *mo bairiúil. mo tuairim, &c.* It is my opinion, &c., &c.  
*1r í* }



531. The pronoun *tú*, thou, is always used to translate the English "you" when only one person is referred to; as, *How are you?* *Cionnar tá tú?* What a man you are! *Naé tú an fear!*

532. The personal pronouns, whether nominative or accusative, always come after the verb; as, *molann ré tú*, he praises you.

533. The disjunctive forms of the personal pronouns are used immediately after the verb 1S in any of its forms expressed or understood; as, *is é an fear láidir é*. He is a strong man. *An é a fuair é?* Was it he who found it? *Naé í o' ingean í?* Is she not your daughter?

534. A personal pronoun which stands for a sentence, or part of a sentence, is third person singular, masculine gender. *An fuo doibhairt mé, is é doirim arís*. What I said, I repeat.

535. The accusative personal pronoun usually comes last in the sentence or clause to which it belongs: as, *O'fás ré ar an áit rin iad*. He left them at that place. *Rug ré leir míle eile é*. He brought it with him another mile. *O'fásar im óidid é*. I left it after me.

### Relative Pronoun.

536. The relative particle follows its antecedent and precedes its verb: as, *an fear a coitlocar*, the man who will sleep.



537. The relative particle, whether expressed or understood, always causes aspiration: as, *an fear fear ag obair*, the man who will be at work.

538. The relative when preceded by a preposition causes eclipsis (unless the verb be in the Past Tense). When the relative *a* signifies "all that" or "what" it causes eclipsis: as, *an áit i n-a b-fuit ré*, the place in which he is; *a b-fuit i mBáile-Átha-Cliat*, all that is in Dublin.

539. When the relative is governed by a preposition and followed by a verb in the Past Tense, the relative combines with *no* (the old sign of the Past Tense), and does not eclipse: *an áit ar tuit doó*, the place where (in which) Hugh fell.

540. The eight verbs which do not admit of the compounds of *no* being used before them (see par. 279) form an exception to the last rule: as, *an típ i n-a dtáinig ré*, the country into which he came.

541. In English, when the relative or interrogative pronoun is governed by a preposition, the pronoun very often comes before the governing word: as, *What are you speaking about? The man that he gave the book to is here.* In colloquial Irish it is a very common practice to separate the relative particle from the preposition which governs it; but instead of using a simple preposition at the end of the sentence, as in English, we use a **prepositional pronoun**. Thus we

can say—*an fear aḡ a bfuil an bó*, or more usually, *an fear a bfuil an bó aḡe*,\* the man who has the cow; *an fear ar òiolar an capall leir*, or *an fear leir òiolar an capall*, the man to whom I sold the horse.

**542.** The forms *ḡarḡ* or *ḡarab*, *ḡarḡ*, *leirḡ*, *marḡ*, &c., are compounds of a preposition, relative particle; “*ro*,” the sign of the Past Tense; and *ba* or *buḡ* the Past Tense of *ir*.

*ḡarḡ* = *ḡo* + *a* + *ro* + *ba* = to whom was.

*leirḡ* = *le* + *a* + *ro* + *ba* = with or by whom was.

as, *bean ḡarḡ ainm Brigid*, a woman whose name was Brigid.

**543.** As the accusative case of the relative particle has exactly the same form as the nominative, the context must determine, in those tenses in which the verb has no distinct termination for the relative, whether the relative particle is the subject or object of the verb; *an fear a buail Seagán*, may mean, ‘The man whom John struck, or The man who struck John.’

### Translation of the Genitive Case of the English Relative.

**544.** The Irish relative has no inflection for case; hence, in order to translate the English word “whose”

---

\* *an fear aḡo b-fuil an bó aḡe* is also used.

when not an interrogative, we must use one of the prepositions (a, go, i) + relative particle + possessive adjective (before the noun).

The man whose son was sick.

$$\text{an fear} \left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{a} \\ \text{go} \\ \text{i n-a} \end{array} \right\} \text{raib a mac tinn.}$$

but a, go, or 'sá, i n-a are often shortened to a, go, and 'na; hence the above sentence in colloquial Irish would be—

$$\text{an fear} \left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{a} \\ \text{go} \\ \text{'na} \end{array} \right\} \text{raib a mac tinn.}$$

The woman whose son is sick visited us yesterday.

$$\text{an bean ú} \left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{go} \\ \text{'sá} \\ \text{\&c.} \end{array} \right\} \text{b'fuil a mac tinn t'áinig sí} \\ \text{ar éuaire in'oe éuaínn.}$$

545. To translate the English relative pronoun when governed by an active participle, we employ a somewhat similar construction; as—

The hare that the hounds are pursuing.

An siarfaib go b'fuil na saobair ar a loig (or ar a tóir, or as tóirai'geaict air).

The man whom I am striking.

An fear atá agam 'á (o'á, sá) bualaib.

**546.** The relative  $\Delta$  meaning *all that, what*, may itself be genitive; as,  $\tau\pi\iota\alpha\eta \Delta \mu\alpha\iota\theta \Delta\eta\eta$ , a third of what were there. " $\text{Beir beanna\u00f1t \u00f3m \u00e9ir\u00edde \u00e9um \Delta \mu\alpha\iota\pi\epsilon\Delta\eta\eta \Delta\pi \u00b5\Delta\eta\epsilon\eta\epsilon\iota\epsilon \u00c9\pi\epsilon\Delta\eta\eta \u00f3\iota\zeta.}$ " "Bear a blessing from my heart to all those who live on the fair hills of Holy Ireland."

The relative  $\Delta$  in this sentence is genitive case being governed by  $\u00e9\mu$  (see par. 603).

---

## CHAPTER V.

---

### The Verb.

**547.** As a general rule the verb precedes its nominative: as,  $\tau\acute{\alpha} \rho\acute{\epsilon}$ , he is;  $\text{\u00b5\iota \Delta\eta \pi\epsilon\Delta\pi \Delta\eta\eta}$ , the man was there.

**Exceptions.** (1) When the subject is a relative or an interrogative pronoun the verb comes after its subject; as,

$\Delta\eta \text{bua\u00e7a\iota\iota\iota} \Delta \text{bua\pi\epsilon\Delta} \mu\acute{\epsilon}$ . The boy who strikes me.

$\text{\u00c9\Delta\theta \Delta\tau\acute{\alpha} \Delta\zeta\Delta\tau}$ ? What have you?

(2) In a relative sentence the nominative though not a relative pronoun may precede its verb; but as the noun is usually far separated from the verb, a

personal pronoun is used as a sort of temporary subject, so that really the noun and its pronoun are nominative to the same verb: as,

An fear atá 'na fearaí ag an doras buail ré an capall. The man who is standing at the door struck the horse.

Compare the similar use of the French pronoun *on*; or the English "He that shall persevere unto the end, *he* shall be saved."

(3) The nominative often precedes its verb in poetry, and sometimes even in prose.

Raí go raib ort! Success to you!

**548. Transitive verbs govern the accusative case; and the usual order of words is, Verb, Subject, Object.** When the subject or object is a relative or an interrogative pronoun it precedes the verb.

Do rinne Seagán an báid ain. John made that boat.

Do buail an buachaill é. The boy struck him.

For the conditions under which a verb is aspirated or eclipsed, see pars. 21(g) and 26(e).

### Use of the Subjunctive Mood.

**549.** The most frequent use of the present subjunctive is with the conjunction *go*, expressing a wish. If the wish be negative use *ná* (except with *raib*).

So mbeannuigib Dia duit !	May God bless you !
So bfoirib Dia orainn !	God help us !
So tceig tu rlan !	Safe home ! (may you go safely) !
Nar leigib Dia rin !	May God not allow that ! God forbid !
So raib maic agat !	Thank you !
Nar raib maic agat !	No thanks to you !

550. The subjunctive is also used after **nó so**, **so** or **acht so**, all meaning "until"; and after **muna**, "unless," but only when there is an element of doubt.

Fan annso so ttagaib aris.	Stay here till I come again.
Muna sgreibib rib me.	Unless you believe me.
Muna ttagaib tu an t-airgead dom.	Unless you give me the money.

551. **Sul a**, **sul ra**, **sul ma**, **sul da**, all meaning "before," when used with reference to an event not considered as an actual occurrence, take the subjunctive; as,

Imcig leat rui a ttagaib an maistris. Be off with you, before the master comes.

552. The past subjunctive is found after **da** or **muna** to express a supposed condition. They may also take a conditional. In translating the English phrases "if he believed," "if he had believed" (im-



plying that he did not believe), we use *ṛá* with the past subjunctive; but as this Tense is identical in form with the Imperfect Tense, it may be said that it is the Imperfect Tense which is employed in this case.

If you were to see Donal on the following day  
you would pity him.

*Ṭá breicteá 'Domnall ar maidin lá ar n-a bárao  
baó tpuag leat é.*

If you were to give me that book.

*Ṭá ttagtá-ra domra an leabair sin.*

If it were true for him. *Ṭá mbaó fíor dó é.*

All the particles given above can also be used with the past subjunctive in reference to past time.

**553.** In the passive voice the present and past subjunctive are identical in form with the Present and Imperfect Tenses (respectively) of the Indicative Mood.

May it be worn out well. *Go scaitítear go maic é.*

May it never be worn out. *Nár éaitítear go deo é.*

If it were worn out. *Ṭá scaití é.*

### Relative Form of the Verb.

**554.** The relative form of the verb is used after the relative particle *á*, *when it is the subject of the verb*; (but never after the negative relative *nao*, *which* or *who...not*). It has a distinct form in two, and only



two, Tenses—the *Present* and the *Future*. In these two Tenses it ends in *ar* or *ear*. In all the other Tenses the third person singular is used after the relative pronoun. The verb is aspirated after the relative, expressed or understood ; but *nač* eclipses.

**555.** The inflection of the relative form in *present* tense is not used in the spoken Language of to-day (except in proverbs). In Connaught the final *r* of the relative form is added to the form for the 3rd person singular ; *e.g.*, *an fear a buaileannr*, *the man who strikes* ; *an buachaill a tuiqeannr*, *the boy who understands*. The literary form of the relative in the *future* tense is retained in full vigour in Connaught ; *e.g.*, *an fear a buaileannr*, *the man who will strike*. In Munster the relative form has entirely disappeared in both the present and the future tenses (except in proverbs). The 3rd person singular form has taken its place ; *e.g.*, *an fear a buaileann*, *the man who strikes*.

**556.** As the relative has no inflection for case, ambiguity sometimes arises : *e.g.*, *an fear a buail Seagán*, may mean, either *the man who struck John*, or, *the man whom John struck*. The context usually solves the difficulty. The following construction is sometimes employed in order to obviate any ambiguity :—

<i>An fear a buail Seagán.</i>	The man who struck John.
<i>An fear gur buail Seagán é.</i>	The man whom John struck.

**557.** *Cionnup*, how ; *nuaip*, when ; and *map*, as, are followed by the relative form of the verb in the Present and Future, and the verb is aspirated ; but with *cionnup a*, *cia an éadai*, *cia an nóir*, *cia an mod*, or any

other such locutions, the eclipsing  $\Delta$  or  $\iota$  (*in which*) is used before the verb. Before the Past Tense, of course,  $\Delta\eta$  ( $\Delta + \eta\omicron$ ) is used.  $\text{Cionnur } \Delta \text{ } \text{b}^{\text{r}}\text{uit } \text{t}^{\text{u}}?$  How are you?

$\text{m}\Delta\eta$  is also followed by the ordinary Present and Future.

**558.**  $\text{Sul}$ , “before,” has two usages. It may be followed by the relative forms—*e.g.*,  $\text{rut } \text{t}^{\text{i}}\text{o}\text{c}\text{f}\text{ar } \text{r}^{\text{e}}$ ,  $\text{rut } \text{t}^{\text{a}}\text{i}\text{n}\text{i}\text{s } \text{r}^{\text{e}}$ ; or else it may be followed by one of the particles  $\Delta$ ,  $\text{m}\Delta$ ,  $\text{r}\Delta$ ,  $\text{v}\Delta$ , all of which eclipse.

**559.** After these particles, the Subjunctive Mood is often used when the event is future and uncertain, or contains a mental element: as—

$\text{Imt}^{\text{i}}\text{s } \text{leat } \text{rut } \Delta \text{ } \text{b}^{\text{r}}\text{eic}^{\text{i}}\text{v}^{\text{o}} \text{r}^{\text{e}} \text{t}^{\text{u}}$ .

Be off (with you) before he sees you (*i.e.*, so that he may not see you).

It is not correct to eclipse after the word  $\text{rut}$ , as  $\text{rut } \text{v}\text{t}^{\text{a}}\text{i}\text{n}\text{i}\text{s}$ , although sometimes done.

**560.** The relative form of the Present Tense is frequently used as a historic present, even when no relative occurs in the sentence: as—

$\text{Noctar } \text{Eremon}^{\text{o}}\text{n } \text{v}^{\text{o}}\text{i}\text{v}$ . Eremon revealed to them.

### The Verbal Noun and its Functions.

561. "Is there an Infinitive in Irish?" We give here Father O'Leary's answer to his own question. "Certainly not." In Irish there is neither an infinitive mood nor a present participle, both functions being discharged by the verbal noun. It follows from this statement that *there is no such thing as a sign of the infinitive mood in Irish.*

Ír maic tuom siubál.	I wish to walk.
Dúbrar leis gan teacht.	I told him not* to come.
Tá orm fa peiceam.	I have to wait.
Níor maic tuom bean-nuḡad do.	I did not wish to salute him.
Ní tís le mála folam rearm.	An empty bag cannot stand.

562. In the above examples, and in thousands of similar ones, *the Irish verbal noun is an exact equivalent in sense of the English infinitive, sign and all.* If any one of the prepositions do (or a), le or cum, be used before the verbal nouns in the above examples, the result is utter nonsense. Now consider the following examples:—

Ír maic tuom an bócar do siubál.	I wish to walk the road.
Ír maic tuom focal do labairt.	I wish to speak a word.

---

\* Not before the English infinitive is translated by gan (a prep., without).

Dubairt m'áair liom gan an capall do díol.	My father told me not to sell the horse.
Ir cóir duit an fear do baint.	You ought to cut the grass.
An féidir leat an éaint do thuiscint?	Can you understand the conversation?
Ir mian liom litir do righiobad.	I wish to write a letter.

563. The *preposition* do in the above examples and ones like them between the noun and the verbal noun, is very often, in the spoken language, softened to a: and this a is not heard before or after a vowel :  
as,

Ir cóir duit comairle 'glaicad.  
You ought to take advice.

564. In any sentence of the first set of examples there is question of only one thing; *e.g.*, riubal, ceacht, feiceam, &c., but in each of the sentences of the second set *there is a relation between two things*: *e.g.*, bócar and riubal, focal and labairt, &c., and to express this relationship a *preposition* is used between the two nouns. If the relation between the nouns be altered the preposition must also be altered, as—

Tá bócar agam le riubal,	I have a road to walk.
Tá focal agam le labairt,	I have a word to say.
Tá capall agam le díol,	I have a horse for sale (to sell).
Tá fear agat le baint,	You have grass to cut.

565. There is still another preposition which can be used between the nouns to express another alteration in meaning—

Ṭá ceac éum comnuigte I have a house to live in.  
aḡam.

Ṭá capall éum marcuiḡ- He has a horse to ride on.  
eacṫa aige.

If in any one of these sentences the wrong preposition be employed the proper meaning cannot be expressed.

566. In translating the simple English infinitive of an intransitive verb, use the simple verbal noun in Irish: as,

He told me to go to Cork. Dubairt ré liom out go  
Corcaig.

An empty bag cannot ní tig le mála folam  
stand. reamh.

It is impossible to write ní féidir rḡrúbadh gan  
without learning. foghlaim.

I prefer to walk. Ir fearr liom siubal.

He cannot stand. ní tig leis reamh.

Tell him to sit down. Abair leis siubé ríor.

Tell them to go away. Abair leo imṫeacṫ.

**567. When the English intransitive infinitive expresses purpose (i.e., the gerundial infinitive), use the preposition *le*.**

He came to stay,	Ṭáinig sé le fanamaint.
I have a word to say,	Tá focal agam le labhairt.
You are to wait,	Tá tú le feiceamh.
I am to go,	Táim le dul.

**568. When the English verb is transitive and in the simple infinitive (no purpose implied) use the preposition *do* or the softened form *a*.**

My father told me to buy a horse.	Dubhairt m'athair liom capall do éannaic.
You ought to have cut the grass.	Ba cóir duit an fear do baint.
He told me not to shut the door.	Dubhairt sé liom gan an doras do dhúnadh.
Would you like to read this book?	An mian leat an leabhar ro do léigead?

**569. When the English infinitive is transitive, and also expresses purpose, use either *Cun* or *le* before the noun which is the object of the English infinitive, and *do* before the verbal noun in Irish; *cun* takes**



the noun after it in the genitive; *le* becomes *leir* before the article, and then causes eclipsis if the noun be singular.

He will come to judge the living and the dead.	ΤΙΟCΡΑΙΘ ΣΕ CUM BPEIT- EAMHNAIP TO CATHAIPIC AP ΘEOYΔAIΘ AΓYIP AP MHPIB- AIΘ.
He came to buy a horse.	ΤΑΙΝΙΣ ΡΕ LE CAPALL TO CEANNAĆ.
He went to strike the men.	CUAIΘ ΡΕ CUN NA BPEAP TO BUALAΘ.
He went to strike the man.	CUAIΘ ΡΕ LEIP AN BPEAP TO BUALAΘ.
He said that to praise the girl.	TOYBAPIC ΡΕ PIN LEIP AN SCAILIN TO MOLAΘ.
He came to buy the horse.	ΤΑΙΝΙΣ ΡΕ CUM AN CAPALL A CEANNAĆ.

570. We can also express the above by means of the preposition *to* alone, but in this case we must put the verbal noun before the other noun. This latter will, of course, be now in the genitive case, because one noun governs another in the genitive case. This is the *only governing power the verbal noun has in Irish*.

He came to buy the horse.	ΤΑΙΝΙΣ ΡΕ TO CEANNAĆ AN CAPALL.
He went to strike the man.	CUAIΘ ΡΕ TO BUALAΘ AN PIN.



Did you come to strike John?	An dtánsaíṛ do bualaṁ Ṣeaḡáin?
He came to make fun.	Ṭáinis ré do ṁeunam Ṣunn.
They came to make war.	Ṭánsaṁar do ṁeunam coṢaíṁ.

N.B.—This latter method is not often used in the spoken language.

**571. When the English infinitive is passive, and also expresses purpose, use *le*.**

He is to be hanged.	Ṭá ré <i>le</i> cnoṁaṁ, or <i>le</i> beíṁ cnoṁṁa.
The milk is to be drunk.	Ṭá an bainne <i>le</i> n-ól (&c.).
Cows are to be bought at the fair.	Ṭá ba <i>le</i> ceannaṁ ar an aonaṁ.
The grass is to be cut.	Ṭá an feup <i>le</i> bainṁ.
The house is to be sold.	Ṭá an teacṁ <i>le</i> díol.
There is no one to be seen on the road.	Ní fuit duine ar bíṁ <i>le</i> feicṁint ar an mbóṁar.

**572. When a personal pronoun is the object of the English infinitive and the latter does not express purpose, we translate as follows:—**

You ought not to strike me.	{ Ní cóir dúit mé do bualaṁ. Ní cóir dúit mo bualaṁ.
I wished to strike him.	{ Ba mian liom é do bualaṁ. Ba mian liom a bualaṁ.

- I wish to praise her. { 1r mian liom í do mólað.  
1r mian liom a mólað.
- It is not right to strike { ní cóir íaṽ do bualað.  
them. ní cóir a mbualað.
- It is a bad thing to wound { 1r olc an fuo mé do  
me. gonað.  
1r olc an fuo mo gonað.
- I cannot understand it. ní cís liom a tuigrint  
(its understanding).
- Could you tell me who it An féidir leat a\* inniunt  
was? dom cia 'iḃ'é?
- A desire to kill them came táinig mian a marbta  
upon me. oimra.

In this sentence marbta is the genitive case (after the noun mian) of the verbal noun marbað.

573. When the English infinitive governing a personal pronoun expresses purpose, we translate as follows:—

- He came to strike me. { táinig ré dom bualað.  
táinig ré le mé do bualað.
- I went to strike them. { Cuairṽ mé d'á mbualað.  
Cuairṽ mé le h-iaṽ do  
bualað.

---

\* Whenever the object of the verbal noun is a phrase, it cannot be put in the genitive case, but the possessive adjective a is used before the verbal noun.

They are coming to wound us.	{	Τά ριαθ ας τεαετ οάρ ηγοναθ. Τά ριαθ ας τεαετ λε ρινν οο ζοναθ.
---------------------------------	---	--

If we used the autonomous form in this last sentence we would get—

They are coming to wound us.	{	Τάταρ ας τεαετ οάρ ηγοναθ. Τάταρ ας τεαετ λε ρινν οο ζοναθ.
---------------------------------	---	--

**574.** The English present participle is usually translated by the verbal noun preceded by the preposition ας. If the English present participle expresses “rest” (*e.g.*, *standing, sitting, lying, sleeping, &c.*), the verbal noun must be preceded by the preposition ι (=in) compounded with a suitable possessive adjective (§ 186).

Τά ριαθ ας τεαετ.

They are coming.

Όι αν βυαεαλλ'να ρεαραμ.

The boy was standing.

Τά αν βεαν να ρεαραμ.

The woman is standing.

**575.** The verbal noun in each of the above is dative case, governed by the preposition ας.

**576.** When the English present participle governs an objective case, the object if a noun will follow the verbal noun in Irish and will be in the genitive case.

He is cutting the grass.

Τά ρε ας βαητ αν ρεη.

She was stretching out her  
hand.

Όι ρι ας ριναθ α λαημε  
αμαε.

Are you reading the letter? Өрүт тү аҕ лэйҕеао на  
уітһе?

Who was beating the child? Сіа бі аҕ буаһао аһ теһб?

**577. If the object of the English present participle be a personal pronoun we cannot translate as in the above sentences, because the pronouns have no genitive case; hence instead of using the personal pronouns we must employ the possessive adjectives. Possessive adjectives must always precede the nouns which they qualify.**

He is striking me. Та ре 'ҕам (or аҕом)  
буаһао (lit. he is at my  
beating).

Are you breaking it? Өрүт тү 'ҕа (аҕа)  
бүрһеао?

Are you breaking them? Өрүт тү 'ҕа (аҕа) һбүр-  
еао?

He is praising us. Та ре ҕаһ (аҕ аһ) һоһао.

Is he not burning them? һао өрүт ре 'ҕа (аҕа)  
һооҕао?

They are not striking her. һі өрүт һао 'ҕа (аҕа)  
буаһао.

Note carefully the initial effects of the possessive adjectives on the verbal nouns after them.

**578.** Preceded by *ar*, the Verbal Noun has the force of a Present Participle Passive, denoting a continued or habitual state : as,

Ní fuit an teanga rin ar      That language is not  
labairt anois.                      spoken now.

Tá an éruit ar crodaó ar      The harp is hanging on  
an ngéis.                              the bough.

Sgeul ar leanaimint.              A continued story.

In this idiom *ar* neither aspirates nor eclipses.

**579.** With *iar*, *after* (eclipsing), the Verbal Noun has the force of a Perfect Participle : as,

iar tceadt i n-Éirinn do pádraig,  
Patrick having come into Ireland.

But in this idiom *iar* is usually shortened to *ar*: as, *ar tceadt*, &c., the eclipsis being retained. In colloquial language the Verbal Noun is commonly aspirated, not eclipsed, by *ar* in this usage.

**580.** *San* is the word used to express negation with the Verbal Noun : as, *san tceadt*, not to come.

Abair le Brian san an goit do tpeadaó.  
Tell Brian not to plough the field.

**581.** *San* with the Verbal Noun has the force of the Passive Participle in English with *un* prefixed: as,

Mo cúis púint olua asur ias san rníóm,  
My five pounds of wool, and they *unspun*.

582. The genitive of the Verbal Noun is often used where a relative or infinitive clause would be used in English: as,

Níor fásad fear inniúte rḡéil,  
'There was not a man left *to tell the tidings*.

Cailín deap cḡúróte na mbó,  
The pretty girl *who milks* the cows (lit. of the milking, &c.).

583. The following examples will be studied with advantage. They are culled from F'ather O'Leary's *Míon-éaint* :—

Someone is striking me.	Tátar 'ḡam bualaó.
I am being struck.	Táim dom bualaó.
Someone is striking the dog.	Tátar as bualaó an ḡadóir.
The dog is being struck.	Tá an ḡadóir dá bualaó.
Someone is breaking the stones.	Tátar as briceaó na ḡcloó.
The stones are being broken.	Tá na cloó dá mbriceaó.
They used to kill people.	Bí sí as maibeaó daoine.
People used to be killed.	Bí sí daoine dá maibeaó.
They used to buy horses.	Bí sí as ceannaó capall.
Horses used to be bought.	Bí sí capall dá ḡceannaó.

We (or they) will be digging potatoes.      *Beirítear as baint prá-  
taoi.*

Potatoes will be dug.      *Beiró prátaoi dá mbaint.*

We shall have dug the potatoes.      *Beir na prátaoi bainte  
asainn.*

If they were breaking stones, they would not be cold.      *Dá mbéirí as bpiread  
cloc ní beirí fuar.*

If they are breaking stones they are not cold.      *Má tátear as bpiread cloc  
ní fuiltear fuar.*

### THE VERB IS.

**584. A definite noun is one limited by its nature or by some accompanying word to a definite individual or group.**

**The following are definite nouns:—**

- (a) The name of a person or place (but not a class name like *Sapanaó*).
- (b) A noun preceded by the definite article.
- (c) A noun preceded by a demonstrative adjective.
- (d) A noun preceded by *gach* (because it means each taken individually).
- (e) A noun followed by any other definite noun in the genitive case.

Any noun not included in the above classes is an **indefinite noun**.



585. Whenever a definite noun is the subject of a verb in English, and the verb *is* is employed in translating into Irish, a personal pronoun must immediately precede the definite noun in Irish.

John is the man. *Is é Seán an fear*

### WHEN TO USE THE VERB *IS*.

586. (a) When the verb "to be" in English is followed by a definite noun, use *is*: as,

I am John.	<i>Is m'is Seán.</i>
It is the man.	<i>Is é an fear é.</i>
You are my brother.	<i>Is tú mo bheirbhreathair.</i>
James is the man.	<i>Is é Seumas an fear.</i>
It is the woman of the house.	<i>Is í bean an tíge í.</i>
Are you not my friend?	<i>Náíl tú mo cara?</i>
He is not my father.	<i>Níl h-é m'athair.</i>

All sentences of this class are called "Identification sentences."

He, she and they in sentences of identity have usually the force of demonstrative pronouns, and are translated by *é sin*, *í sin*, *iad sin*.

(b) When the verb "to be" in English is followed by an indefinite noun *is* or *tá* may be used, but with very different meanings. Whenever we use the verb *is* in such a sentence we convey the idea of "classification," or *species*: as, *Is*

ainmíge bo. A cow is an animal, &c.; or we *lay stress on what the person or thing is at the time being*, without any thought that he has become what he, or it, is. For instance, a father, enumerating to a friend the various positions in life of his children, may say, *ir ceannuirde Seumap, ir ragar Seagán, agus ir fear olige Míceal*: James is a merchant, John a priest, and Michael is a lawyer. He should not use *τá* in such a case, as he considers simply what each is at the time being. When *τá* is used we convey the idea that the person or thing *has become* what he (or it) is, *and that he (or it) was not always so*. Suppose a father is telling what professions his sons have adopted, he should say, *τá Seumap 'na ceannuirde, &c.* **In such constructions the verb *τá* must be followed by the preposition *i* or *a*, and a suitable possessive adjective.**

(c) **The difference between *τá* and *ir* is well exemplified by the two sentences *ir fear é* and *τá ré 'na fear*, both meaning "He is a man."** If we see a figure approach us in the dark, and after looking closely at it we discover it to be a man, our correct phraseology would then be, *ir fear é*. But when we say *τá ré 'na fear* we convey a very different idea. We mean that the person of whom we are speaking is no longer a boy, he has now reached manhood. If anyone were speaking to you of a person as if he were a mere boy, and you wished to correct him, you should use the phrase *τá ré 'na fear*.

(d) When the indefinite noun after the verb “to be” in English is qualified by an adjective, the verb *ir* or *τá* may be used according to the idea we wish to convey. If we wish to express a “condition sentence” (*i.e.*, one which has reference to the state or condition of the subject at the time in question), we use *τá*; otherwise we employ *ir*, *e.g.*,

He is a small man.      *Τά πέ 'να fear beas.*

He is a useful man.      *Τά πέ 'να fear fóganta.*

She was a good woman      *Ūi pí 'na mnaoi maic.*

(e) When the verb *ir* is employed in such sentences *there is a choice of two constructions*. In the second construction (as given in the examples below), we emphasise the adjective, by making it the prominent idea of the sentence. The definite article must be used in the second construction.

*ir lá breáḡ é.*      } It is a fine day.  
*ir breáḡ an lá é.* }

*ir oirḡce fuar í.*      } It is a cold night.  
*ir fuar an oirḡce í.* }

*ir bó breáḡ í rin.*      } That is a fine cow.  
*ir breáḡ an bó í rin.* }

*Naḡ oileán dear é rin?*      } Isn't that a pretty island?  
*Naḡ dear an t-oileán é rin?* }

(f) When a simple adjective follows the verb "to be" in English, either *is* or *is* may be employed in translating, as,

Honey is sweet, *is miltir milt* or *is milt miltir*.

He is strong, *is láirir é* or *is ré láirir*.

587. The beginning of a sentence is naturally the place of greatest prominence, and is usually occupied in Irish by the verb. When, however, any idea other than that contained in the verb is to be emphasised, it is placed immediately after the verb *is*, and the rest of the sentence is thrown into the relative form.

For example, "We went to Derry yesterday," would be generally translated: *Chuaib rinn go Daoire iné*: but it may also take the following forms according to the word emphasised.

*We went to Derry yester-* *is rinne do chuaib go*  
*day.* *Daoire iné.*

*We went to Derry yester-* *is go Daoire do chuaib*  
*day.* *rinn iné.*

*We went to Derry yester-* *is iné do chuaib rinn go*  
*day.* *Daoire.*

588. The Verb *is* is then used.

- |     |                      |   |
|-----|----------------------|---|
| (1) | To express Identity, | <i>e.g., is é Conn an pí.</i>                       |
| (2) | „ Classification,    | „ <i>is pí Conn.</i>                                |
| (3) | „ Emphasis,          | „ <i>is iné do chuaib</i><br><i>rinn go Daoire.</i> |

## POSITION OF WORDS WITH 1S.

589. The predicate of the sentence always follows

1S: as,

Dermot is a man,	1r fear 1oiamuio.
They are children,	1r páirioi iao.
John is a priest,	1r rāgarτ Seāḡān.
Coal is black,	1r ouḃ ḡual.
A cow is an animal,	1r ainimḡe bó.
Turf is not coal,	nī ḡual móin.
Is it a man?	An fear é?

590. Sentences of Identification—*e.g.*, *Conn is the king*—form an apparent exception. The fact is that in this sentence either the word “Conn” or “the king” may be the *logical predicate*. In English “king” is the *grammatical predicate*, but in Irish it is the *grammatical subject*, and “Conn” is the *grammatical predicate*. Hence the sentence will be, 1r é Conn an rí.

591. In such sentences, when two nouns or a pronoun and noun are connected by the verb 1r, as a general rule, the more particular and individual of the two is made grammatical predicate in Irish. *The converse usually holds in English.* For instance, we say in English “I am the messenger,” but in Irish 1r mire an teactaire (lit. “the messenger is I”). Likewise with the following:—

You are the man,	1r tú an fear.
He is the master,	1r é rin an maistrir.
We are the boys,	1r rinne na buacailí.

**592.** Sentences like "It is Donal," "It is the messenger," &c., are translated  $\text{ír é } \text{'Domnall é, } \text{ír é an teachtair é.}$  Here " $\text{é } \text{'Domnall}$ " and " $\text{é an teachtair}$ " are the grammatical predicates, and the second  $\text{é}$  in each case is the subject.

It is the master,  $\text{ír é an mairtírtir é.}$

He is the master,  $\text{ír é rin an mairtírtir.}$

(The underlined words are the predicates.)

**593.** In recent times we often find such sentences as " $\text{ír é an mairtírtir,}$ " " $\text{ír é an fear,}$ " &c., for "It is the master," "It is the man," in which the last  $\text{é}$ , the subject of the sentence, is omitted.

### Translation of the English Secondary Tenses.

**594.** The English Present Perfect Tense is translated by means of the Present Tense of the verb  $\text{tá,}$  followed by  $\text{ó' éir}$  (or  $\text{tar éir}$ ) and the verbal noun. When  $\text{ó' éir}$  comes immediately before the verbal noun, the latter will be in the genitive case; but when  $\text{ó' éir}$  is separated from the verbal noun by the object of the English verb, the verbal noun will be preceded by the preposition  $\text{do,}$  and will be dative case.

He wrote,  $\text{'Do ríróib ré.}$

He has just written,  $\text{Tá ré ó' éir ríróibéa.}$

He broke the window,  $\text{'Do bair ré an fuinneog.}$

He has broken the window,  $\text{Tá ré ó' éir na fuinneogse do bairead.}$

He has just died,  $\text{Tá ré ó' éir báir ó' fágáil.}$



595. The word “just” in these sentences is not translated into Irish, and the word after *o’ éir* is in the genitive case.

596. When the English verb is transitive there is another very neat method of translating the secondary tenses. As already stated, there is no verb “to have” in Irish: its place is supplied by the verb *ṭá* and the preposition *as*. Thus, “I have a book” is, *Ṭá leabhar asam*. A similar construction may be used in translating the secondary tenses of an English transitive verb. The following sentences will illustrate the construction:—

I have written the letter, *Ṭá an litir scríobtha asam*.  
 I have struck him, *Ṭá ré buailte asam*.  
 Have you done it yet? *Ófuil ré deunta asat fóir?*  
 I have broken the stick, *Ṭá an maide bhriste asam*.

597. The English Pluperfect and Future Perfect are translated in the same manner as the Present Perfect, except that the Past and Future Tenses respectively of *Ṭá* must be used instead of the Present, as above. The following examples will illustrate the construction:—

He died, *fuair ré báir*.  
 He had just died, *Ói ré o’ éir báir o’ fásáil*.  
 He had broken the chair, *Ói ré o’ éir na cathairneac do bhréad*.  
*(Ói an cathair bhriste aise.*



The window has just been broken by a stone,	{ Cácar o' éir na fuinneoige do bhréad le cloic.
I had written the letter,	{ Dí an litir rḡríobda agam. Díor o' éir na litre do rḡríobad.
I shall have finished my work before you will be ready,	{ Déad o' éir críce do cur ar mo cúro oibre rui a mbéir péir (uillam), Déir mo cúro oibre críoc- nuighe agam rui a mbéir péir.

### Prepositions after Verbs.

598. We give here a few verbs which require a preposition after them in Irish, although they require none in English:—

Ḡéillim do,	I obey.
Umluigim do,	„
Cuirigim le,	I assist.
Innrim do, }	
Deirim le, }	I tell.
Tuḡaim ar,	I persuade, prevail over.
Tuḡaim fá,	I endeavour.
Iarraim ar,	I ask (beseech).
Fiaḡnuigim de,	I ask (enquire).
Ḡeallaim do,	I promise.
Deannuigim do,	I salute.

Cuimnínim ar,	I remember.
Beirim ar,	I catch, I overtake.
Gléupaim ar,	I prepare (gléup ort, get ready).
Leigim do,	I allow, permit.
Comhairligim do,	I advise.
Maidim do,	I forgive, pardon.
Freagairim do,	I answer.
Fóirim ar,	I help.
Éirígeann liom,	I succeed (lit. It arises with me).
Tuigim le,	I confirm, I corroborate.
Tuig liom	I can.
Sgaoilim do,	I loose.
Impigim ar,	I beg, I beseech.
Taitnínim le,	I please.

599. Many verbs require prepositions different from those required by their English equivalents.

Labraim ar,	I speak of.
Fánaim le,	I wait for.
Triáctaim ar,	I treat of.
Ceitim ar,	I conceal from.
Sgaraim le,	I separate from.
Cuirim ríor ar,	I send for.
Labraim le,	I speak to.
Deirim le,	I say to.
Ar . . . le,	say, said to (ar is used only in quotation).

Beirim aḡaiṙ ḁr,	I face (for) (a place).
Deunaim maḡaṙ ṙá,	I make fun of, I mock.
Cṙiṙim ṙá,	I tremble at.
Ḃainim le (also ʔo),	I belong to, I appertain to.
Beirim buaiṙ ḁr,	I win a victory over.
Ṭáim boṙuiḡṙe aḡ,	I am bothered with.
Éiṙim le,	I listen to.
Ṭar le,	It seems to.
ḡaiṙṙim ḁr,	I call for.
Cinnim ḁr,	I excel or surpass in.
ḡurṙim ḁr,	I pray for; also, I beseech. (ḡurṙ oṙainn, pray for us.)
ṙeuc ḁr,	look at (ṙeuc oṙṙa, Look at them; ṙeuc iṙṙ, Examine or try them).
ṙáḡaim ṙlān aḡ,	I bid farewell to.
leṙnaim ʔe,	I stick to.
Beirim ḁr...ḁr,	I take hold of...by: as, He caught me by the hand. Ruḡ ṙé ḁr lāim oṙm. Catch her by the hand, Beir ḁr lāim uirṙi.
Ṭiṙlaim le...ḁr,	I sell to...for. He sold me a cow for £10. Ṭiṙl ṙé bó uom ḁr ʔeic Ḃṙūntaiṙ,
Ṭiṙlaim ḁr,	I pay for.
Caṙṙim le,	I throw at.
Cṙomaim ḁr, ṙoṙuiḡim ḁr, luiḡim ḁr,	I begin to (do something).

### The Negative Adverb—Not.

600. Young students experience great difficulty in translating the English negative adverb—"not." We here give the various ways of translating "not."

Not, with the Imperative mood, is translated by *nā*.

„	„	Subjunctive	„	„	<i>nān</i> .
„	„	Verbal Noun	„	„	<i>ṣan</i> .

Indicative Mood	{	Past Tense	{ statement, <i>nīon</i> or <i>čan</i> . question, <i>nān</i> or <i>načan</i> .
		All other tenses	{ statement, <i>nī</i> or <i>ča</i> . question, <i>nač</i> , <i>nā</i> .

"If... not" is translated by *muna* : \* if the verb be in the past tense use *munan*.

All the above forms are used in principal sentences only. In dependent sentences "that...not" is always translated by *nač* or *nā*, except in the past tense, indicative mood, when *nān* or *načan* must be used.

*nī*, aspirates; *ča*, eclipses. *Ča* becomes *čan* before *ī* and *ṣut* : e.g., *čan mé*, *It is not I*.

How to answer a question. Yes—No.

601. (a) In Irish there are no fixed words for "Yes" or "No." As a general rule in replying to questions, "Yes" or "No" is translated by using the same verb and tense as has been employed in the question.

---

\* Pronounced *morru*.

The subject of the verb used in reply need not be expressed, except when it is contained in the verb ending. In English we frequently use a double reply, as "Yes, I will." "No, I was not," &c. In Irish we use only one reply.

Óruit tú tinn? Táim. Are you sick? Yes, or I am.

Raib ré annsin? Ní raib. Was he there? No.

An b'aca tú Seagán? Did you see John? No.  
Ní f'aca or ní f'acar.

An b'aca ré an teach? Did he see the house?  
Connaic. He did.

An dtuigean tú? Do you understand? Yes.  
Tuigim.

An dtiocfaid tú? ní Will you come? No, I  
tiocfao. will not.

(b) When the question has been asked with any part of the verb *ir*, expressed or understood, followed by a **definite** noun, the English subject must be used in the answer, as also must the verb, except when the answer is negative.

An tú an fear? Ní m're. Are you the man? No.

Nac é rin an fear? Ir é. Is not he the man? Yes,  
he is.

An b'é rin Seagán? Níor Was that John? No, it  
b'é. was not.

Notice also the following:—

FIRST SPEAKER.	SECOND SPEAKER.
ἵρ μῖρε ἀν τεὰὐτῶρε. <i>I am the messenger.</i>	Ἀν τὺ ? <i>Are you ?</i>
ἡὶ ἡ-ἐ ρῖν ἀρ ρᾶῖαρτ. <i>He is not our priest.</i>	ἡὰὐ ἐ ? <i>Isn't he ?</i>
ἵρ ἐ ἀν ρεαρ ἐ. <i>It is the man.</i>	ἡὶ ἡ-ἐ. <i>It is not.</i>

(c) Whenever the question is asked by any part of the verb ἵρ, followed by an **indefinite** predicate, the word “Yes” is usually translated by repeating the verb and the indefinite predicate, as—

ἡὰὐ ρῡαρ ἀν ἰὰ ἐ? ἵρ Isn't it a cold day? Yes,  
ρῡαρ. or It is.

ἡὰὐ μαῖτ ἐ? ἵρ μαῖτ. Is it not good? Yes, or  
It is.

Ἀν αἶγε ἀτὰ ἀν τ-αῖρῖεαὐ? Is it he who has the  
ἵρ αἶγε. money? Yes.

But in this case the answer may also be correctly given by using the neuter pronoun εἰαὐ. ἵρ εἰαὐ (or 'ρεαὐ) for “yes;” ἡὶ ἡ-εἰαὐ for “no.”

Ἀν μαὐαὐ ἐ ρῖν? ἡὶ Is that a dog? No.  
ἡ-εἰαὐ.

Ἀν Σαραῖαὐ ἐ? 'Seαὐ. Is he an Englishman?  
Yes.

ἡὰὐ μαῖτ ἐ? 'Seαὐ. Isn't it good? It is.

(d) When the question is asked with “who” or “what,” the subject alone is used in the answer, and if the subject be a personal pronoun the emphatic form will be used, as—

Cia punne é rin? Mire. Who did that? I did.

## CHAPTER VI.

### The Preposition.

602. As a general rule the simple prepositions govern a dative case, and precede the words which they govern: as,

Ċáinis ré ó Ćorċais. He came from Cork.

Ċus ré an t-uball do'n mnaoi. He gave the apple to the woman.

**Exceptions.** (1) The preposition *roir*, “between,” governs the accusative case: as, *roir Ćorċais agus Luimneac*, between Cork and Limerick.

(2) *Go rí*,\* meaning “to” (*motion*), is followed by the nominative case.

Ċuair ré go rí an teac. He went to the house.

\**Go rí* is really a corrupted form of the old subjunctive mood of the verb *ċigim*, I come; so that the noun after *go rí* was formerly nominative case to the verb.



(3) The preposition *ζαν*, “*without*,” governs the dative in the singular, but the accusative in the plural: as,

Τά ρέ ζαν ἑείλλ.	He is without sense.
Ζαν ἄρ ζαίρθε.	Without our friends.

**603.** The words *τιμῆαι* (*around*),\* *τραρνα* or *τρεαρνα* (*across*), *κοίρ* (*beside*), *φατο* (*along*), *ἑμ†* or *ἑυν* (*towards*), *τοίρς* (*owing to*), *ῥάλα*, *ῥάιτα*, and [*ιομῑρα*] (*as to*, or *concerning*), although really nouns, are used where prepositions are used in English. Being nouns, they are followed by the genitive case.

Ῥαίτ ρέ φατο να ρρῑνε ἑ. He struck him along the  
nose.

Ἀν μβείρῑ τῑ Ἀς ῑὐτ ἑμ Will you be going to  
Ἀν Ἀοναίς ἑ μβάρᾶς? (towards) the fair to-  
morrow?

Ῥῑ μῑτ ρέ τιμῆαι να He ran around this place.  
ἡ-ἄιτε ρεο.

Ῥῑ ἑυαῑαρ τραρνα Ἀν They went across the field  
ζῑρῑτ εορνα. of barley.

For the so-called compound prepositions see par. 608, &c.

**604.** The prepositions *ἑ* (*in*) and *τε* (*with*) become *ινρ* and *τερ* before the article: e.g., *ινρ Ἀν τεῑρἈν* *in*

\* The meanings given in parenthesis are the usual English equivalents, not the real meaning of the words.

† The *m* in this word is pronounced like *n*.

*the book*; *leir an bfeap, with the man.* In Munster *ó* (*from*), *oe* (*off, from*), *oo* (*to*), *ais*e (= *as*, *at, with*), and some others take *r* before the *plural* article—*ó rna fearaib, from the men*; *oo rna buaib, to the cows.*

605. The simple prepositions cause aspiration when the article is not used with them: *as, ar bárr an énuic.* On the top of the hill. *Fuar ré ó fear an tige é.* He got it from the man of the house.

Exceptions (1) The prepositions *as, at*; *le, with*; *ar, out*; *so, to*, cause neither aspiration nor eclipsis; *as, Óo tuit ré le Goll.* He fell by Goll. *Cuaró ré so baile-Áda-Chiač.* He went to Dublin.

*San, without*, may aspirate or not.

(2) The preposition *i* or *a*, *in*, causes eclipsis even without the article: *as, Ói ré i gCorcaig.* He was in Cork.

606. The simple prepositions, when followed by the article and a noun in the singular number, usually cause eclipsis: *as, ar an mbárr, on the top*; *ó 'n bfeap, from the man*; *'ran mbaile, at home.*

Exceptions. (1) The prepositions *oo,\* to*, and *oe, of, off, from*, when followed by the article, usually cause aspiration, though in some places eclipsis takes place.

---

\**So* or *so* *óí* is usually used for "*to*" when *motion to* is implied (the Latin acc. of motion). *oo* is usually used for "*to*" when *no motion* is implied (the Latin dative).

Aspiration is the more common practice: *oo 'n fear*, to the man; *oe'n mnaoi*, from the woman. They prefix *τ* to *ρ*; as, *τug ré oo'n tragart é*. He gave it to the priest. *Σα* (= *inr an*) usually aspirates in Munster; *pa borca mór*, in the big box.

(2) When *gan*, *without*, is followed by the article it produces no change in the initial consonant following: as, *gan an fion*, without the wine; but if the following noun be masculine and begin with a vowel, or be feminine beginning with *ρ*, *τ* is prefixed: as, *gan an t-eun*, without the bird; *gan an truil*, without the eye.

In the Northern dialect aspiration takes place after the preposition and the article.

607. When a simple preposition ending in a vowel comes before the possessive adjective *Δ* (*his, her, or their*), or the possessive *Δρ*, *our*, and *vup*, *your*, the letter *n* is inserted before the possessive: as, *te n-Δ lām*, by his hand; *tré n-Δ mborair*, through their palms; *te n-Δρ gcuir*, with (or by) our portion; *te nvup totuit*, with your permission.

Except the prepositions *oo* and *oe*, which become *o'*.

Whenever *go* or *te* comes before any other word beginning with a vowel the letter *n* is usually inserted: as, *ó mairim go n-oróce*, from morning till night; *go n-Altban*, to Scotland; *te n-eagla*, with fear. (See par. 29.)

608. In Irish certain nouns preceded by prepositions have often the force of English prepositions. As nouns they are, of course, followed by a genitive case, unless a preposition comes between them and the following noun, when the dative case naturally follows. Such locutions are styled in most grammars "Compound Prepositions," and to account for their construction they give the rule "*Compound Prepositions are followed by the genitive case.*"

609. We give here a fairly full list of such phrases employed in Modern Irish.

1 bparrao,	along with; on the side of.
1 briaðnuire,	} in the presence of.
1 láchair,	
or cómhair,	
or coinne,	before; face to face.
ar ucht,	} for the sake of, for the love of
ar ion,	
ar ríad,	under the pretext of.
1 bpochair,	} along with, in company with.
1 bteannta,	
1 btaob,	concerning; with regard to.
1 gceann,	at the end of.
pé déin,	} for, (in the sense of going <i>for</i> ).
1 gcoinne,	
pé déin,	towards.
1 mearg,	among, amongst.

an aḡaiṑ,	opposite.
i n-aḡaiṑ,	against.
an reāṑ,	throughout (used of time).
le h-eap̄ba,	for want of.
an ruṑ,	throughout (used of space).
i ḡcōir, (i ḡcomoir),	for, for the benefit of.
an cūl,	behind, at the back of.
i noiāiṑ,	after (used of <i>place</i> ).
tap̄ éir, ṑ'éir,	after (used of time).
i ḡcoinnib, i ḡcoinne,	against.
i ḡcūrraiṑe,	concerning, about.
cun, }	to, towards.
(cum), }	
ṑ' ionnraṑe, }	towards.
ṑ' ionnraḡiṑ,	
le coir, }	beside, by the side of (a sea, a
coir, }	river, &c.)
i n-euṑan,	against.
ṑo péir,	according to.
or cionn,	over, above.
tap̄ ceann,	beyond, in preference to.
le h-air,	beside, by the side of.
i ḡcaiṑeam, i ruṑ,	during.
i n-ainṑeoin, }	in spite of.
i n-aimṑeoin, }	
le h-aḡaiṑ,	for, for the use of.
i n-aice,	near.

## 610. Some of them are followed by Prepositions.

Láim le,	near, beside.
i n-ḡar do,	near.
timceall ar,	around ( <i>and touching</i> ).
mar ḡeall ar,	on account of.
mar don le,	along with, together with.
i n-éinfeacht le, }	together with, at the same
i n-don-díge le, }	time as.

## 611. Examples—(1) Nouns.

Do cuir ré or cionn an doras é.	He put it over the door.
Connac i n-aice an tobair iad	I saw them near the well.
Do rit an ḡadair i n-oidir an trionnais.	The hound ran after the fox.
Cia bí i bpochair Seumair?	Who was along with James?
Do tug ré dom an capall ro le n-aḡair an trḡairt.	He gave me this horse for the priest.
Tiocfaod ar air d' éir an tramhair.	I shall come back after the summer.
Ní fuil leigear ar bit i n-aḡair an báir.	There is no remedy against death.
Do cuair ré pá déin na ḡcapall.	He went for the horses.
Ar fead an lae.	Throughout the day.
Ar fuo na tíre.	Throughout the country.

Do péir an leabair reo.	According to this book.
Tá ré le coir na fairrige.	He is beside the sea.
Do cuir ré an lúb tim- ceall ar mo ceann.	He put the loop around my head.

612.

## (2) Pronouns.

Ċáinis ré im óiair.	He came after me.
Ná téig 'na ndiair reo.	Do not go after these.
Cia bí 'na foóair?	Who was along with him?
Deunrao é rin ar do fon.	I shall do that for your sake.
Ar ceannuigir é reo lem aóair?	Did you buy this one for me?
Óir ar a n-aóair.	I was opposite them.
Tá an fúireós or ár scionn.	The lark is above us.
An raib tú i n-ár n-aice (i n-aice linn)?	Were you near us?
Ói ré i n-aice liom.	He was near me.
Ċáinis riao im aóair.	They came against me.

## Translation of the Preposition "For."

613. (a) When "for" means "to bring," "to fetch," use fá óéin, a scionne, or as iarrair, followed by a genitive case; or as triall ar: as,

Go for the horse.	Téig as triall ar an scapall.
He went for John.	Cuair ré fá óéin Seagáin.



(b) When "*for*" means "to oblige," "to please," use *do*, followed by the dative case: as,

Do that for him. *Deun rin do.*

Here is your book for you. *'Seo duit do leabhar.*

Use *do* to translate "*for*" in the phrases "good for," "bad for," "better for," &c.: as,

This is bad for you. *Is olc duit é seo.*

(c) When "*for*" means "for the use of," use *le* *n-áḡairḡ*, followed by a genitive case, or *do* with dative.

I bought this for the Ceannuiḡear é seo le  
priest. *n-áḡairḡ an trāḡairḡ*  
*(do'n trāḡairḡ).*

He gave me money for *ṡus ré airḡear dom leo'*  
you. *áḡairḡ.*

(d) When "*for*" means "duration of time" use *le*, with the dative case, if the time be *past*, but *ar fearḡ* or *go ceann*, with the genitive case, if the time be *future*. In either case past and future are to be understood, not with regard to present time, but to the time of the action described.

(1) He had been there for *ḡi ré ann le bliadain*  
a year when I came. *nuair táinig mé.*

(2) He stayed there for a *'O' fan ré ann ar fearḡ*  
year. *(go ceann) bliadna*

In the first sentence the year is supposed to be completed at the time we are speaking about, and is, therefore, past with regard to the time we are describing.

In the second sentence the time at which the action of staying (if we be allowed to use the word "action") took place at the very beginning of the year that he spent there. The year itself came after the time we are describing; therefore it is future with regard to that time

It will be a great assistance to the student to remember that *ar* *reavò* or *go ceann* are used when in the English sentence the fact is merely stated, as in sentence (2); and that *le* is used when a secondary tense ought to be used in the English sentence, as in sentence (1).

(e) When "*for*" means "for the sake of," use *ar* *ron* followed by a genitive case.

He toiled for a little gold. *Šaotruig ré ar ron beag-  
áin óir.*

(f) When "*for*" is used in connection with "buying" or "selling," use *ar* followed by a dative case.

He bought it for a pound. *Ceannuig ré ar púnt é.*  
I sold it for a shilling. *Óiolar ar ršilling é.*

(g) "*For*" after the English verb "ask" is not translated in Irish.

He asked me for a book. *Ó' iarr ré leabhar orm.*  
Ask that man for it. *iarr ar an bpeap roim é.*

(h) "*For*" after the word "desire" (*óuit*) is usually translated by *í* (=in): as, Desire for gold, *óuit í n-óir* or, *óuit in ar óir.*

(i) The English phrase "*only for*" very often means "were it not for," "had it not been for," and is translated by *muna mbiað*, followed by a nominative.

Only for John the horse would be dead now.      *Muna mbeað Seagán do beað an capall marb anoir.*

**614.      Note the following Examples.**

I have a question <i>for you</i> .	<i>Tá ceirt agam ort.</i>
To play <i>for</i> (a wager).	<i>Imirt an (geall).</i>
To send <i>for</i> .	<i>Fíor do cup . . . . ar.</i>
A cure <i>for</i> sickness.	<i>{ Leigear i n-aghaid tinnir.</i>
	<i>{ „ ar tinnear.</i>
To wait <i>for</i> .	<i>Fanaimint le.</i>
<i>For</i> your life, don't tell.	<i>Ar d' anam, ná h-innir.</i>
He faced <i>for</i> the river.	<i>Thug ré a aghaid ar an abainn.</i>
They fought <i>for</i> (about) the Fiannship.	<i>Throidedar um an bfiannuigeacht.</i>
Don't blame him <i>for</i> it.	<i>Ná cuir a mílteán ar (its blame on him).</i>
I have great respect <i>for you</i> .	<i>Tá meaf mór agam ort.</i>
This coat is too big <i>for me</i> .	<i>Tá an cóta ro ró-mór dom.</i>
What shall we have <i>for</i> dinner?	<i>Caidé b'iar againn ar ar ndinneur?</i>
It is as good <i>for</i> you to do your best.	<i>Tá ré comh maic agat do uiceall do deunam.</i>

### 613. Translation of the Preposition "Of."

(a) Whenever "of" is equivalent to the English possessive case, translate it by the genitive case in Irish.

The son of the man.	Mac an fíir.
The house of the priest.	Teach an traidir.

There are cases in which the English "of," although not equivalent to the possessive case, is translated by the genitive in Irish.

The man of the house.	Fear an tíse.
A stone of meal.	Cloic míne.

(b) Whenever "of" describes the material of which a thing is composed, or the contents of a body, use the genitive case.

A ring of iron.	Fáinne iarainn.
A cup of milk.	Cupán bainne.
A glass of water.	Gléine uisce.

(c) When "of" comes after a numeral, or a noun expressing a part of a whole, use *de* with the dative; but if the word after "of" in English be a *personal pronoun*, use one of the compounds of *ag* with the personal pronouns.

The first day of the week.	An céad lá <i>de</i> 'n traidt-main.
One of our hounds.	Ceann <i>o'</i> ár n- <i>g</i> adairib.
Many of the nobles.	Mórán <i>de</i> na h-uairib.
One of us was there.	Ói <i>duine ag</i> inn ann.

Some of them.

Cuid aca.

One of these (persons).

Duine aca ro.

Δ *teat* is used for "*half of it*" or "*half of them.*"

(d) When "*of*" follows "*which*," use *ve* with nouns, and *as* with pronouns.

Which of the men?

Cia (ciaca) ve na fearaib?

Which of us?

Cia asainn?

(e) When "*of*" means "*about*" use *timcioll* or *fa*.  
They were talking of the *úisdear as caint timcioll*  
matter. *an puca.*

(f) "*Of*" after the English verb "*ask*," "*inquire*," is translated by *ve*.

Ask that of John.

Fiairuiḡ rin ve Seagán.

(g) When "*of*" expresses "*the means*" or "*instrument*" use *le* or *ve*.

He died of old age.

Fuar ré bár le sean-aoir.

He died of hunger.

Fuar ré bár leir an ocrair.

He died of a seven days' sickness.

Fuar ré bár ve ḡalar  
reáct lá.

(h) Both of us.

Sinn araon.

Both of you.

Sib araon.

Both of them.

Siad araon, iad araon.

## 616. Further Examples.

He is ignorant <i>of</i> Irish.	Τά ρέ αινθριραε ιnr an n̄saeðilis.
The like of him.	Δ leičéro (his like).
Such a thing as this.	Δ leičéro reo ve puo.
Don't be afraid <i>of</i> me.	ηά biot̄ eazlaort pómam.
A friend <i>of</i> mine.	Capa òom.
A friend of yours.	Capa òuit.
A horse <i>of</i> mine.	Capall liom.
A horse of Brian's.	Capall le brian.
I have no doubt <i>of</i> it.	ηi fuil am̄par azam air.
A man of great strength.	ƿear ιr mór nearc.
Oisín of mighty strength and vigour.	Oirín ba čreun nearc a'r luč.
(Ba is the past tense of ιr in the previous sentence.)	
I think much of it.	Τά meap mór azam air.

## CHAPTER VII.

## Classification of the Uses of the Prepositions.

## 617. ΔΣ, AT.

1. To denote possession (*a*) with τά.

Τά ρσιαν azam.	I have a knife.
Τά αιčne azam ap an bƿear rom.	I know that man.

## (b) With other verbs :

Coimeádo ré an rígan aige      He kept the knife for him-  
féin.      self.

O' fás ré aca iad      He left them to them.

2. It is used in a **partitive sense**, of them, &c

Aon duine aca.      Anyone of them.

Sac aon aca.      Each one of them.

## 3. With verbal nouns to translate the English present participle :

(a) active — Tá ré ag bualaó an buachaill.

He is beating the boy.

(b) passive — Tá an buachaill agá ('gá) bualaó.

The boy is being beaten.

4. With verbal nouns followed by **ro**, meaning "while."

Ag dul roib.      While they were going.

## 5. To express the agent or cause with passive verbs.

Cá an clac á (agá) tógáil      The stone is being raised  
ag Séamus.      by James.

The English preposition *at* when used with assemblies, *e.g.* market, fair, school, &c., is usually translated by *ar*.



618.

AR, ON, UPON.

1. Literal use:  $\Delta\pi$   $\Delta\pi$   $\mu\beta\omicron\pi\tau\omicron$ , on the table.

2. In adverbial phrases:

## (a) TIME.

 $\Delta\pi$   $\beta\alpha\lambda\lambda$ , just now, by and by.  $\Delta\pi$   $\pi\epsilon\alpha\delta$ , during. $\lambda\acute{\alpha}$   $\Delta\pi$   $\lambda\acute{\alpha}$ , day by day. $\Delta\pi$   $\mu\alpha\iota\omicron\iota\eta$ , in the morning. $\Delta\pi$   $\upsilon\alpha\iota\pi\upsilon\beta$ , by times. $\Delta\pi$   $\Delta\pi$   $\lambda\acute{\alpha}\tau\alpha\iota\pi$ , immediately.

## (b) PLACE.

 $\Delta\pi$   $\beta\iota\tau$ , in existence, at all. $\Delta\pi$   $\epsilon\upsilon\tau$ , behind. $\Delta\pi$   $\lambda\epsilon\alpha\pi$ , $\Delta\pi$   $\pi\gamma\omicron\iota\tau$ , in school. $\Delta\pi$   $\pi\alpha\iota\pi\pi\gamma\epsilon$ , $\Delta\pi$   $\pi\upsilon\tau$ , throughout, $\Delta\pi$   $\mu\upsilon\iota\pi$ , $\Delta\pi$   $\pi\epsilon\alpha\mu$ , in heaven. $\Delta\pi$   $\lambda\acute{\alpha}\pi$ , on the ground. $\Delta\pi$   $\beta\omicron\pi\tau\omicron$ , on board. $\Delta\pi$   $\tau\iota$ , on the point of. $\Delta\pi$   $\tau\alpha\lambda\alpha\mu$ , $\Delta\pi$   $\pi\epsilon\delta\omicron$ , in length. $\Delta\pi$   $\tau\alpha\lambda\mu\alpha\iota\eta$ , $\Delta\pi$   $\pi\epsilon\delta\omicron$ ,\* lengthwise. $\Delta\pi$   $\Delta\pi$   $\tau\omicron\pi\alpha\pi$ , by (through) the door.

$\tau\pi\iota$ $\tau\pi\omicron\iota\gamma\tau\epsilon$	{	$\Delta\pi$ $\pi\epsilon\delta\omicron$ ( $\pi\epsilon\delta\omicron$ ),	three feet long.
		$\Delta\pi$ $\lambda\epsilon\iota\tau\epsilon\alpha\tau\omicron$ ,	„ wide.
		$\Delta\pi$ $\delta\omicron\iota\pi\tau\omicron\epsilon$ ,	„ high.
		$\Delta\pi$ $\tau\omicron\iota\mu\eta\eta$ ,	„ deep.

## (c) CAUSE.

 $\Delta\pi$   $\Delta\pi$   $\delta\omicron\upsilon\delta\alpha\pi$   $\pi\omicron\iota\eta$ , for that reason, therefore.  $\Delta\pi$   $\lambda\epsilon\alpha\tau\tau\pi\omicron\mu$ , under oppression. $\Delta\pi$   $\pi\omicron\eta$ , for the sake of. $\Delta\pi$   $\tau\omicron\iota\tau$ , according to the $\Delta\pi$   $\epsilon\alpha\gamma\lambda\alpha$   $\gamma\omicron$ , for fear that.

will of.

\*  $\Delta\pi$   $\Delta$   $\pi\epsilon\delta\omicron$ , literally on its length.

ar éigin, hardly, by compulsion.      ar toḡa, at the choice of.

(d) MANNER AND CONDITION.

ar cor ar biṭ, on any condition.	ar veitb, in the form of.
ar an móð, in the manner.	ar riubal, in progress.
ar aḡair, forward.	ar a laigear, at least.
aḡair ar aḡair, face to face.	ar air, back.
leat ar leat, side by side.	ar ḡcúl, backwards.
ar iarad, ablaze.	ar trarna, breadthwise.
ar cumar, in the power of.	ar fán, } astray.
beaḡán ar beaḡán, little by little.	ar readhrán, }
ar cáirde, on credit.	ar meirge, drunk.
	ar roṑar, trotting.
	ar iaradct, on loan.

3. In numbers :

• Trí ar fícéir, 28.

Tríomad ar fícéir, 23rd.

4. (a) Before the verbal noun, which it eclipses or aspirates to form the past participle active.

ar ōunað an ṑorair ṑóib      Having shut the door,  
o' imṭigeaṑar.      they went away.

(b) With the possessive adjective a and verbal noun to form perfect participle passive.

ar n-a cup i n-eaḡar aḡ, Edited by.

ar n-a cup amad aḡ Connrad na ḡaeóitḡe, Pub  
lished by the Gaelic League.

## 5. Emotions felt by a person :

Care, sorrow, &c.	Τά ἰμνήθε, ὑπὸν ὀρμ.
Thirst, hunger, need, sickness.	Τά τάρτ, ὀρμάρ, εἰρβαῖο, τιννέαρ ὀρμ.
Fear.	Τά εἰστέ, φαίτῳ ὀρμ.
Joy.	Τά λύτῳ ὀρμ.

## 6. In phrases :

Τιοῦλασαῖ ὀρμ, favour (conferred) <i>on</i> .	Τά βαοῖατ ὀρμ, there is danger.
Σιον, ἔαν ὀρμ, affection <i>for</i> .	Κυμνέ ὀρμ, remembrance <i>of</i> .
Εοταρ, φιορ, αἰτνε ὀρμ, knowledge <i>of</i> , acquaintance <i>with</i> .	Καπαοῖο ὀρμ, } complaint Σεαρῶν ὀρμ, } against.
Σπῶν ὀρμ, horror of, or disgust with.	Φαῖτ ὀρμ, hatred of. Φιαῖ ὀρμ, debt <i>due from</i> .
Τά ἀμῖαρ ἄσαν ὀρμ, I suspect him.	Κυμαρ ὀρμ, power <i>over</i> , capacity <i>for</i> .
Κυμαῖτ ὀρμ, power over.	Φιαῖα ὀρμ, claim upon.
Βυαῖο ὀρμ, victory over.	Ὁ εἰανῳτ ὀρμ, } of obli-
Ὀνόρ ὀρμ, honour (given) to.	Ὁ' φιαῖατ ὀρμ, } gation
	Ὁ' υαλαῖ ὀρμ, } <i>on</i> .

In the above phrases the agent is expressed by ἄς where possible, τά ἔμῳ, ἔαν, εοταρ, κυμνέ, &c., ἄσαν ὀρμ.

## 7. ΔΡ is used after various classes of verbs.

(a) Verbs of motion upon or against (*striking, inflicting, &c.*).

Impim pian Δρ.	I punish.
Teitgim Δρ (te).	I throw at.
Caratō Δρ.     }	Met.
ĉapla Δρ.     }	
Caratō an fear oim.	I met the man.
Do gao ré ve clocaib oita. He threw stones at them.	

(b) After the verb **BEIRIM**.

Beirim Δρ.	I call (name), (Δρ before person), induce, persuade, compel a person (to do something).
Beirim iarraċt Δρ.	I attempt (something or to do something).
Beirim ríol Δρ.	I requite, repay (a person).
Beirim* fá n-deara Δρ,	I cause, make (a person do something).
Beirim gráð Δρ.	I love (fall in love with), &c.
Beirim mínuḡað Δρ.	I explain.

(c) After the verb **BEIRIM**.

Beirim Δρ . . . . Δρ.	I catch, seize (a person) by (the hand, &c.).
Beirim Δρ.	I overtake, I catch.
Beirim breiteárnaρ Δρ,	I judge, pass judgment on.
Beirim buaib Δρ.	I conquer.

---

\* Cuirim may be used in this sense.

**(d) After verbs of Praying, Beseeching, Appealing to.**

1arḡaim ap.	I ask, entreat (a person).
ḡurōim ap.	I pray <i>for</i> (sometimes I pray <i>to</i> ); but generally ḡurōim cum 'Dē ap ron &c. I pray to God for.
1mpḡḡim ap.	I beseech.

**(e) After verbs of Speaking about, Thinking of, Treating of, Writing of, &c.**

1abḡaim ap, I speak of.	Smuainim ap, I think of.
ṽrāctaim ap, I treat of.	Sḡrīobaim ap, I write of,
Cuirinnḡim ap, I remember.	or about.

**(f) Verbs of looking at :**

ḡeucaim ap or deapcaim ap. I look at.

**(g) Verbs of threatening, complaining, offending, displeasing, &c.**

ḡaḡḡaim ap.	I threaten.
ḡoilim ap.	I am troublesome to.
ḡeibim loct ap.	I find fault with.

**(h) Verbs of concealing, neglecting, hindering, forbidding, refusing, &c.**

Ceitim ap.	I conceal from.
Toirmeaḡḡaim ap.	I hinder or forbid.
ḡailḡim ap.	I neglect.

(i) Verbs of **protecting, guarding, guaranteeing**  
**against.**

Seacain tú féin ar an Take care of yourself from  
 otrucaill rin. that car.

Seacain do lám ar an Take care! That stone  
 gcloic rin. will hurt your hand.

8. (a) Cuirim is used with verbal nouns and adverbial  
 phrases beginning with ar :

Cuirim ar criú.	I put in a tremble.
Cuirim ar coimeádo.	I put on one's guard.
Cuirim ar reáchrán.	I set astray.
Cuirim ar cáirde.	I put off, delay, postpone.
Cuirim ar gcúl.	I put aside.
Cuirim ar neimhníó.	I reduce to nothing, I annihilate.

(b) Also with many nouns :—

Cuirim ceist ar.	I question.
Cuirim comaoin ar.	I do a kindness to.
Cuirim } Caitim }	crainn ar (tar). I cast lots for.
Cuirim cuma ar.	
Cuirim gairm (ríor) ar.	I send for.
Cuirim lám ar.	I set about.
Cuirim leigear ar.	I apply a remedy to.
Cuirim luidesáan ar.	I lay a snare for.
Cuirim moill ar.	I delay.
Cuirim toirmearg ar.	I hinder.
Cuirim imríde ar.	I beseech.

9. *Šnīm* is used with many nouns meaning "I inflict...on."

<i>Šnīm bašar ap.</i>	I threaten.
<i>Šnīm buaiðreaoð ap.</i>	I trouble.
<i>Šnīm capaoio ap.</i>	I complain of.
<i>Šnīm eugcoip ap.</i>	I wrong.
<i>Šnīm feall ap.</i>	I act treacherously towards.
<i>Šnīm pmaett ap.</i>	I exercise authority over, I restrain.
<i>Šnīm breiteamnar ap.</i>	I judge, pass judgment upon.
<i>Šnīm faipe ap.</i>	I watch.

619. AS, OUT OF, FROM.

1. **Literal use:** out of, from, &c.

<i>Cuaoð pé ap an tig.</i>	He went out of the house.
<i>Out ap an mbeataioð.</i>	To depart from life.

2. With various other verbs:

<i>Dúipigim ap coolað.</i>	I arouse from sleep.
<i>Cuipim ap reitð.</i>	I dispossess.
<i>Cpoçaim ap.</i>	I hang from.
<i>Cuipim apam.</i>	I utter (a shriek, &c.).
<i>Leigim ap.</i>	I let off.
<i>Sgmuoçaim ap.</i>	I erase from.
<i>Tuitim ap a céile.</i>	To fall asunder.
<i>Tappaing ap a céile.</i>	To pull asunder.



3. To express **origin, cause; ground of proof; confidence, trust in :**

Ar gac áir.	From every quarter.
Sochar do baint ar.	Derive benefit from.
An fáct ar.	The reason why.
Ar ro ruar.	Henceforth.
Ir follur ar.	It is evident from.
Iontuigte ar.	Inferable from.
Muinigin ar.	Confidence in.

4. After verbs, of **boasting or taking pride in :**

Maoróim ar.	I boast of.
Glórmaí ar.	Glorying in.
Lánmaí ar féin.	Full of himself.

620.      Cum (cum), TOWARDS.

1. Cum is used after **verbs of motion :**

Cuaró ré cum an tíge.	He went towards the house.
Cup cum fairrge.	To put to sea.

2. Before **verbal noun to express purpose :**

Éainis ré cum an éapailt do díol.	He came to sell the horse.
-----------------------------------	----------------------------

## 3. In Phrases, as :

Tabairt cum críche.	To bring to pass.
Tabaim éagam.	I take for myself.
Cup cum báir.	To put to death.
Léig cum báir.	Let die.
Gleupta cum oibre.	Prepared for work.
Cum go.	In order that.
Suirim cum.	I pray to.
Out cum oligeaó.	To go to law.

## 621.           oe, FROM, OUT OF.

## 1. Literal use :

Đainim oe.	I take from.
Éirigim oe.	I arise from.
Tuitim oe.	I fall from.
Sgaoilim oe.	I loose from (anything).

## 2. Partitive use:

Órong oe na daoine.	Some of the people.
Óuine oe na fearaib.	One of the men.
fearoemuintir Macgáma.	One of the O'Mahoney's.

Often before the relative it is equivalent to a superlative relative :

Deupfaó gac níó o'í	I will give everything I
bruil agam.	have.

1r é an fear 1r doirde o' a	He is the tallest man I
b'acaf namh.	ever saw.
ní maic leis níó o' á tuas-	He does not like anything
air do.	you gave him.

### 3. In the following phrases:

oe b'is, because	o' áiríte, for certain
o' eadla so, lest	oe gnát, usually
o' aoir, of age	oe gníom, in effect
oe fíor, perpetually	oe m' iúl, to my knowledge
oe óruim, owing to	oe óit, } for lack of,
o' éir, after	o' earbair, } want of
oe deoin, willingly	o' aímdeoin, unwillingly,
oe fúil le, in expectation	in spite of
of	oe tair, concerning

### 4. After following verbs, &c.:

fiafhuigim oe.	I ask (enquire) of.
leanaim oe.	I adhere to.
líonta oe (le).	Filled with.
lán oe.	Full of.
gním tásairt oe.	I mention.
gním úrúid oe.	I make use of.
gním ... oe ...	I make ... out of (from) ...
léigim oíom	I let slip.

### 5. To translate "with," &c., in phrases like oe léim, with a leap, at a bound.

622.

᾽ΟΟ, ΤΟ, FOR.

## 1. Literal use :

## (a) After adjectives (generally with ἵπ) :

cinn̄te ᾽οο,	certain for (a person).
cóip ᾽οο,	right for (a person).
éigean ᾽οο,	necessary for.
maĩt ᾽οο,	good for.
peaĩp ᾽οο,	better for.

## (b) After nouns :

(᾽ου) ἰ ποέαρ ᾽οο,	for the advantage of.
(ἵπ) beāta ᾽όο,	(is) his life.
(ἵπ) ātaĩp ᾽όο,	(is) his father.

## (c) After verbs :

Aĩtnim ᾽οο, I command.	Cinnim ᾽οο, I appoint for.
᾽p̄onnaĩm ᾽οο (αρ) I present to.	Cōmaĩpt̄igim ᾽οο, I advise.
᾽Deónuĩgim ᾽οο, I vouchsafe to.	᾽Diú̄taĩm ᾽οο, I renounce.
᾽Fó̄ḡraĩm ᾽οο, I announce to.	᾽Fó̄ḡnaĩm ᾽οο, I am of use to.
᾽F̄reāḡraĩm ᾽οο, I answer.	᾽Geāllaĩm ᾽οο, I promise.
᾽Seĩ̄laĩm ᾽οο, { I obey or do homage to.	᾽Léĩgim ᾽οο, I allow, let.
᾽Or̄tuĩgim ᾽οο, I order.	᾽In̄n̄rin ᾽οο, I tell.
᾽Gābaĩm ᾽οο cōpaĩb̄, I trample.	᾽Taĩp̄bēánaĩm ᾽οο, } I show
	᾽Teāp̄b̄ánaĩm ᾽οο, }
	Coĩgim ᾽οο, I spare.

## 2. To express the agent:

After the verbal noun, preceded by  $\Delta\pi$ ,  $\Delta\zeta$ , &c.:

$\Delta\pi$   $\sigma\tau\epsilon\alpha\delta\epsilon\tau$   $\alpha\eta\eta\rho\omicron$   $\tau\omicron\upsilon\iota\theta$ .      On their arrival here.

With the participle of necessity, participles in  
ion, &c.:

$\eta\iota$   $\mu\omicron\lambda\tau\alpha$   $\upsilon\iota\tau$   $\acute{\epsilon}$ .      He must not be praised  
by you.

$\eta\tau$   $\acute{\epsilon}$   $\pi\iota\eta$   $\eta\tau$   $\iota\eta\upsilon\epsilon\alpha\eta\tau\alpha$   $\upsilon\iota\tau$ .      That's what you ought to  
do.

3. For its use in connection with the verbal noun see  
pars. 563. 568, 570.

## 623.

$\pi\acute{\alpha}$  or  $\pi\acute{\epsilon}$ , UNDER, ABOUT, CONCERNING.

1. Literal use: as,

$\tau\acute{\alpha}$   $\pi\acute{\epsilon}$   $\pi\acute{\alpha}$  'n  $\mu\beta\omicron\rho\tau\omicron$ .      It is under the table.

2.  $\pi\acute{\alpha}$  is used in forming the multiplicatives:

$\Delta$   $\tau\pi\iota$   $\pi\acute{\epsilon}$   $\tau\acute{\omicron}$ , twice three.

$\Delta$   $\tau\acute{\omicron}$   $\pi\acute{\epsilon}$   $\epsilon\epsilon\alpha\tau\alpha\iota\pi$ , four times two.

3. In adverbial phrases:

$\pi\acute{\alpha}$   $\epsilon\omicron\mu\alpha\iota\pi$ , (keeping) for.       $\pi\acute{\alpha}$   $\iota\epsilon\iota\tau$ , separately.

$\pi\acute{\alpha}$   $\upsilon\epsilon\omicron$ , at last.       $\pi\acute{\alpha}$   $\upsilon\epsilon\pi\epsilon\alpha\tau\omicron$ , at last.

$\pi\acute{\alpha}$   $\pi\epsilon\alpha\epsilon$ , individually,       $\pi\acute{\alpha}$   $\mu\alpha\pi$ . just so (as).  
separately.

## 624.

## SAN, WITHOUT.

## 1. Literal use :

San pinginn im póca.

Without a penny in my  
pocket.2. To express *not* before the verbal noun :

Abair leis san teacht.

Tell him not to come.

## 625.

## SO, WITH.

1. This preposition used only in a few phrases :  
generally before *leic*, *a half*.

Míle so leic.

A mile and a half.

Slat so leic.

A yard and a half.

## 626.

## SO, TO, TOWARDS.

## 1. Literal use : motion, as—

So Luimneac.

To or towards Limerick.

## 2. In Phrases :

Ó uair so h-uair.

From hour to hour.

Ó nóin so céite.

From evening to evening.

Ó maidin so h-oirde.

From morning till night.

627. 1 (in, ann), IN, INTO (*Eclipsing*),

1. Of time :

1nṛ an ṭṢamṛaḁ. In Summer.

2. Of motion to a place :

1aṛ ṛṭeaḁṭ 1 n-Ḙṛṃnn ṛo Patrick having come into  
ṛḁṛṃaṣ. Ireland.

3. Of rest at a place :

Ṭá ṛé 1 n'Ṭoṛṛe. He is in Derry.

4. In following phrases :

1 n-ḁoṛṇṛeaḁṭ 1e, along with. 1 n-ḁṣaṛḁ, against.  
1 nṛṛaṛḁ, after. 1 ṣceann, at end of.  
1 ṣcoṛṇne, against. 1 ṣcoṛṃaṛ, in front of.  
1 ṽṛoḁaṛ, in company with. 1 meṛṣ, among.  
1 ṽṛṛṛṃḁṛṛṛ, about.

5. After words expressing esteem, respect, liking, &c.,  
for something :

Ṭúṛ 1 n-ḁṛ. Desire for gold.

6. Used predicatively after Ṭá :

Ṭáṛṛ ṛṃ' ṛeaṛ lṛṛṛṛ ḁnoṛ. I am a strong man now.

7. In existence, extant :

1ṛ ḁṛeaṣ ḁn ḁṛṛṛṛ ḁṬá It's fine weather we're  
ḁnn. having



ní cóna buit túl amac 7 an aimsir fuar atá ann  
anoir.

You ought not to go out *considering* the cold  
weather we have now.

8. Used after *tá* to express "to be able."

Ní bíonn ann féin iompóó. He cannot turn.

9. After *cuir*, *beir*, *túl*, in phrases like :

Cuirim i gcuiríne do. I remind.

Túl i rochtar do. To benefit.

## 628. IOR, BETWEEN, AMONG.

1. Literal use :

nór ior na Románcáib, a custom among the  
Romans.

beirir eatorra, difference between them.

## 2. IOR...AGUS, BOTH...AND.

ior fáiréib agus boét, both rich and poor.

ior atair agus mác, both father and son.

ior éarócáib agus uanab, both sheep and lambs.

ior fearab ir mnaib, both men and women.

## 629. le, WITH.

1. Literal use, with :

leir an maor, with the steward.

2. With *ir* to denote possession :

<i>ir</i> <i>uimra</i> é.	It is my own. It belongs to me.
<i>Cia</i> <i>teir</i> <i>iad</i> ?	Who owns them ?

3. With *ir* and adjectives to denote "*in the opinion of*:"

<i>ir</i> <i>fiá</i> <i>uim</i> é.	I think it worth my while.
<i>'Do</i> <i>b'</i> <i>faod</i> <i>teir</i> .	He thought it long.

## 4. To denote instrument or means :

<i>Uipead</i> <i>an</i> <i>fuinneog</i> <i>te</i>	The window was broken
<i>cloic</i> .	by a stone.
<i>Fuar</i> <i>ré</i> <i>bár</i> <i>teir</i> <i>an</i> <i>ocnar</i> .	He died of hunger.
<i>Lorgad</i> <i>te</i> <i>teimr</i> <i>é</i> .	He was burned with fire.

## 5. After verbs or expressions of motion :

<i>Amac</i> <i>teir</i> ,	Out (he went).
<i>Siap</i> <i>uib</i> !	Stand back !
<i>'D'</i> <i>imtig</i> <i>rí</i> <i>téiti</i> ,	She departed.

## 6. With verbs of touching; behaviour towards; saying to; listening to; selling to; paying to; waiting for :

<i>Éir</i> <i>uim</i> ,	Listen to me.
<i>Uaim</i> <i>te</i> ,	I touch.
<i>Láirim</i> <i>te</i> ,	I speak to.
<i>'Díol</i> <i>an</i> <i>bó</i> <i>teir</i> ,	I sold the cow to him.
<i>Ná</i> <i>fan</i> <i>uim</i> ,	Do not wait for me.

7. After words expressing comparison with, likeness to, severance from, union with, peace with, war with, expectation of.

Ṭá ré côm áro uom.	He is as tall as I.
Ṭá ré cormáil leat.	He is like you.
Ōo rṣar ré leo.	He separated from them.

8. With verbal noun to express purpose, intention (see pars. 567, 569).

9. In following phrases :—

le n-áṣarō, for (use of),	le cor, near, beside.
le n-uṣt, with a view to.	lám le, near.
le n-ar, beside.	mar don le, along with.
le pánarō, downward.	ṭarō le, beside.

### 630. mar, LIKE TO, AS.

1. Literal use : *as, like to.*

mar rin, thus	ásur mar rin ōe, and so on.
Ōo ḡlac ré mar cēte i.	He took her for a spouse.
pá mar áoubairt ré,	(according) as he said.

2. Before relative particle *á*, it is equivalent to *as, how, where, &c.*

an áit mar á paib ré,	the place where he was.
-----------------------	-------------------------

3. For an idiomatic use of *mar*, see par. 353.

## 631. Ó, FROM, SINCE.

## 1. Since (of time) : as,

ó tús, from the beginning.      ó rom, ago.

Conjunction : as,

Ó naé b'facaí tuá ar bít, tángar abaithe arís.

Since I saw nothing I came home again.

## 2. Of place, motion from :

Ó Éirinn,      from Erin.

## 3. In a modal sense :

óo éiríde,      with all thy heart.

boct ó (i) rriopair,      poor in spirit.

4. After words expressing severance from, distance from, going away from, turning from, taking from, exclusion from, cleansing, defending, protecting, healing. alleviating.

## 632. ÓS, OVER.

Used only in a few phrases as :

ór cionn, above, over.      bun ór cionn, upside down.

ór íriot, silently, secretly.      ór áro loudly.

## 633.

## ROIH, BEFORE.

## 1. Of time :

Deic nóimio roih (cun) Ten minutes to three.

Δ τρί.

Roihe reo.

Before this, heretofore,  
formerly.

Roihe rin.

Previously.

2. Of fleeing before, from; coming in front of; lying  
before one (=awaiting); putting before one  
(=proposing to oneself):

Cibé cuirpar roihe é reo Whoever proposes to do  
to éunamh. this.

Ói an ghréadao as muí roih The hare was running  
na conaib. from the hounds.

3. After expressions of fear, dislike, welcome, &c.:

Ná bíod eagla ort rómpa. Do not be afraid of them.

Fáilte rómat (rómaib)! Welcome!

## 634.

## TAR, BEYOND, OVER, PAST.

## 1. Of motion (place and time):

Léim ré tar an mballa. He leaped over the wall.

An mí reo gab toirinn. Last month.

2. Figuratively: "in preference to," "beyond."

Tar mar bí ré deic Compared with what it was  
mbliadna rícead ó roin. 30 years ago.

Tar mar buo úligtead óo. Beyond what was lawful  
for him.

## 3. In following phrases :

οὐτ ἔαρ, transgress.

τεᾷτ ἔαρ, refer to, treat of

ἔαρ εἰρ, after.

ἔαρ αἰρ, back.

Ἐαρ ἑαυν σο, notwithstanding.

## 635. ΤΡΕ, (ΤΡῒ), THROUGH, BY MEANS OF.

## 1. Physically, through :

Τρε n-α λάμαιβ.

Through his hands.

## 2. Figuratively, "owing to" :

Ταῖο ριν.

Owing to that.

N.B.—In the spoken language ταῖο is generally used instead of τρε or τρεαρ.

## 636. um, ABOUT, AROUND.

1. Time : um ἐπ᾽ἐσθῆρα, in the evening.

2. Place : um ἀν τιξ, around the house.

3. About : of putting or having clothing on.

Ὁο εὐρεαταρ umpα α They put on their clothes.  
 ζευτο εἰταδιξ.

4. Cause : uime ριν, therefore.

## PARSING.

637. A. Parse each word in the following sentence :  
 Δοειρ Seumar ζυρ τειρ πέιν αν capall το υι αϊγε  
 (Prep. Grade, 1900).

Δοειρ An irreg. trans. verb, indic. mood, present tense, analytic form of the verb. *δοειρην* (verbal noun, *πάθος*).

Seumar A proper noun, first declen., genitive *Seumαιρ*, 3rd pers. sing., masc. gen., nom. case, being subject of *δοειρ*.

ζυρ A conjunction used before the past tense: compounded of *ζο* and *ρο*.

[’υ] The dependent form, past tense, of the verb *ιρ*.

τειρ A prepositional pronoun (or a pronominal preposition), 3rd pers. sing., masc. gender. Compounded of *τε* and *ρέ*.

πέιν An indeclinable noun, added to *τειρ* for the sake of emphasis.

αν The definite article, nom. sing. masc., qualifying the noun *capall*.

capall A com. noun, first declen., genitive *capall*, 3rd pers. sing., masc. gen. and nom. case, being the subject of the suppressed verb [’υ].



- το A particle used as a sign of the past tense, causing aspiration; but here it has also the force of a relative.
- ἔἰ An irreg. intrans. verb, indic. mood past tense, analytic form of the verb τείνω (verbal noun, θέσις).
- αἷσε A prepositional pronoun, 3rd sing., masc. gender, compounded of αἶς and εἰ.

B. Parse the following sentence: Το αἷσις ἡ πόσις μόνα ἀν' ὅρασις-λαρὰν ἡ νύκτις τῆς νῆας μαρτυρεῖται. (Junior Grade, 1900).

- το A particle used as the sign of the past tense, causing aspiration.
- αἷσις A reg. trans. verb, indic. mood. past tense, analytic form of the verb αἵνω (verbal noun, αἶσις).
- ἡ A personal pronoun, 3rd pers. sing., fem. gen., conjunctive form, nominative case, being the subject of the verb αἷσις.
- πόσις A com. noun, first declen., gen. πόσις, 3rd pers. sing., masc. gender, accusative case, being the object of the verb αἷσις.

- móna** A common noun, third declension, nom. **móin**, 3rd pers. sing., fem. gender, and genitive case, governed by the noun **ῥόο**.
- αῖ** A preposition, governing the dative case.
- ῥεαῖς-λαῖα** A compound verbal noun, genitive **ῥεαῖς-λαῖα**, 3rd pers. sing., dative case, governed by the preposition **αῖ**.
- ι** A preposition, governing the dative case, and causing eclipsis.
- ῥίον** A com. noun, first declension, gen. **ῥίον**, 3rd pers. sing. masc. gender and dative case, governed by preposition **ι**.
- (N.B.—This word may also be second declension).
- τίγε** An irreg. com. noun, nom. **τεαῖ**, 3rd pers. sing., masc. gender, genitive case, governed by the noun **ῥίον**.
- να** The definite article, genitive sing. feminine, qualifying **ῥοίτε**.
- ῥοίτε** A common noun, second declension, nom. **ῥοίτ**, 3rd pers. sing., fem. gender, and genitive case, governed by the noun **τίγε**.

**μαρῶν** A com. noun, second declension, gen. μαρῶνε, 3rd pers. sing., fem. gend. and dative case, governed by the preposition **ἐν** (understood).

**λαε-beatτῶνε** A compound proper noun, nom. **λα beatτῶνε**, 3rd pers. sing., masc. gend. and genitive case, governed by the noun **μαρῶν**.

C. Parse: **τᾶμ εἰς οὗτ ἐμ ἐν ἀναίς** (Junior, '98).

**τᾶμ** An irreg. intrans. verb, indic. mood, present tense, 1st pers. sing., synthetic form, of **τά** (verbal noun, **θεῖς**).

**εἰς** A prep., governing the dative case.

**οὗτ** A verbal noun, 3rd pers. sing., dative case, governed by the preposition **εἰς**.

**ἐμ** A noun (dative case, governed by **οὗ** understood) used as a preposition, governing the genitive case.

**ἐν** The definite article, gen. sing. masc., qualifying the noun **ἀναίς**.

**ἀναίς** A common noun, first declen., nom. **ἀνάς**, 3rd pers. sing., masc. gender, and genitive case governed by **ἐμ**.

D. Parse:  $\Pi\acute{\iota}$   $\kappa\acute{o}\mu\eta$   $\acute{o}\upsilon\iota\tau$   $\acute{\epsilon}$   $\tau\omicron$   $\beta\upsilon\alpha\lambda\alpha\acute{\omicron}$ .

$\eta\acute{\iota}$  A negative adverb, causing aspiration, modifying the suppressed verb  $\iota\tau$ .

$[\iota\tau]$  The assertive verb, present tense, absolute form.

$\kappa\acute{o}\mu\eta$  A common adjective, positive degree, comparative  $\kappa\acute{o}\mu\alpha$ , qualifying the phrase  $\acute{\epsilon}$   $\tau\omicron$   $\beta\upsilon\alpha\lambda\alpha\acute{\omicron}$ .

$\acute{o}\upsilon\iota\tau$  A prep. pronoun, 2nd pers. sing. compound of  $\tau\omicron$  and  $\tau\acute{\upsilon}$ .

$\acute{\epsilon}$  A personal pronoun, 3rd pers. sing., nom. case, disjunctive form, being the subject of the suppressed verb  $\iota\tau$ .

$\tau\omicron$  A preposition, causing aspiration, and governing the dative case.

$\beta\upsilon\alpha\lambda\alpha\acute{\omicron}$ . A verbal noun, genitive  $\beta\upsilon\alpha\lambda\iota\tau\epsilon$ , 3rd pers. sing., dative case, governed by the preposition  $\tau\omicron$ .

N.B.— $\acute{\epsilon}$   $\tau\omicron$   $\beta\upsilon\alpha\lambda\alpha\acute{\omicron}$  is the subject of the *sentence*.

E. Parse:  $\tau\acute{\alpha}\mu\iota\varsigma$   $\rho\acute{\epsilon}$   $\tau\epsilon$   $\kappa\alpha\pi\alpha\lambda\iota$   $\Delta$   $\kappa\epsilon\alpha\eta\eta\alpha\acute{\omicron}$ .

$\tau\acute{\alpha}\mu\iota\varsigma$  An irreg. intrans. verb, indic. mood, past tense, 3rd pers. sing. of the verb  $\tau\acute{\iota}\varsigma\iota\mu$  (verbal noun,  $\tau\epsilon\alpha\acute{\omicron}\tau$ ).

- ré      A pers. pron, 3rd pers. sing., masc. gen.,  
           conjunctive form, nom. case, being  
           the subject of *éáinīs*.
- te      A preposition governing the dative  
           case.
- capall    A common noun, first declens. gen.  
           capall, 3rd pers. sing., masc. gend.  
           and dative case governed by *te*.
- á      The softened form of the preposition  
           *eo*, which causes aspiration, and  
           governs the dative case.
- ceannac.    A verbal noun, genitive *ceannuīte*,  
           3rd pers. sing., dative case, governed  
           by the preposition *á*.

## IDIOMS.

### *τά...άγαν*, I HAVE.

**638.** As already stated there is no verb "*to have*" in Irish. Its place is supplied by the verb *τά* followed by the preposition *άγ*. The direct object of the verb "*to have*" in English becomes the subject of the verb *τά* in Irish: as, I have a book. *τά λεάβαν άγαν*. The literal translation of the Irish phrase is "*a book is at me.*"

This translation appears peculiar at first sight, but it is a mode of expression to be found in other languages. Most students are

familiar with the Latin phrase "*Est mihi pater.*" I have a father (lit. there is a father to me); and the French phrase *Ce livre est à moi.* I own this book (lit. This book is to me).

We give here a few sentences to exemplify the idiom:—

He has the book.	Τά αν τεαβαν αιζε.
I have not it.	Νι φuit ρε αζαμ.
Have you my pen?	Αν υφuit μο ρεανν αζατ?
The woman had the cow.	Υι αν υό αζ αν μησοι.
The man had not the horse.	Νι ραιθ αν επαλλι αζ αν υρεαν.
Will you have a knife to-morrow?	Αν ιμβαιρ ρζαν αζατ ι ιμβαιρ?
He would not have the dog.	Νι υιαθ αν μαορα αιζε.
We used to have ten horses.	Οο υιοθ υειθ ζεαπαλλι αζανν.

### IS U1OM, I OWN.

639. As the verb "*have*" is translated by τά and the preposition αζ, so in a similar manner the verb "*own*" is translated by the verb ις and the preposition ιε. Not only is the verb "*to own*," but also all expressions conveying the idea of *ownership*, such as: The book belongs to me: the book is mine, &c.; are translated by the same idiom.

I own the book.	} ιρ ιιομ αν τεαβαν.
The book is mine.	
The book belongs to me.	

The horse was John's.	}	Da le Seagán an capall.
The horse belonged to John.		
John owned the horse.		

Notice the position of the words. In translating the verb "*have*" the verb *ta* is separated from the preposition *as* by the noun or pronoun; but in the case of "*own*" the verb *ir* and the preposition *le* come together. (See par. 589, &c.)

I have the book.	<i>ta an leabhar agam.</i>
I own the book.	<i>ir liom an leabhar.</i>

In translating such a phrase as "*I have only two cows*," the noun generally comes after the preposition *as*: so that this is an exception to what has been said above.

I have only two cows.	<i>ní fuil agam aict dá bhin.</i>
-----------------------	-----------------------------------

## I KNOW.

640. There is no verb or phrase in Irish which can cover the various shades of meaning of the English verb "*to know*." First, we have the very commonly used word *feadap* (or *feadair mé*), *I know*; but this verb is used only after negative or interrogative particles, and has only a few forms. Again, we have the verb *aitnígim*, *I know*; but this verb can only be used in the sense of *recognising*. Finally we have the three very commonly used phrases, *ta eolair agam*,



τὰ αἰτνε ἈΓΑΜ, and τὰ Ἀ φίορ ἈΓΑΜ, all meaning "*I know*;" but these three expressions have three different meanings which must be carefully distinguished.

Whenever the English verb "*know*" means "*to know by heart*," or "*to know the character of a person*," "*to know by study*," &c., use the phrase τὰ εὐλαρ ἈΓ...ἈΡ.

Whenever "*know*" means "*to recognise*," "*to know by appearance*," "*to know by sight*," &c., use the phrase τὰ αἰτνε ἈΓ...ἈΡ. This phrase is usually restricted to *persons*.

When "*know*" means "*to know by mere information*," "*to happen to know*," as in such a sentence as "*Do you know did John come in yet?*" use the phrase τὰ Ἀ φίορ ἈΓ, e.g. Ὀφουλ Ἀ φίορ ἈΓΑΤ ἈΝ ὈΤΑΙΝΙΣ ΣαῖῖἈΝ ἱρτεἈῖ ῑῑῑ?

As a rule young students experience great difficulty in selecting the phrases to be used in a given case. This difficulty arises entirely from not striving to grasp the real meaning of the English verb. For those who have already learned French it may be useful to state that as a general rule τὰ εὐλαρ ἈΓΑΜ corresponds to *je sais* and τὰ αἰτνε ἈΓΑΜ to *je connais*.

τὰ αἰτνε ἈΓΑΜ ἈἱΡ Ἀῖῖ Νἱ ῑουλ εὐλαρ ἈΓΑΜ ἈἱΡ. *Je le connais mais je ne le sais pas*. I know him by sight but I do not know his character. "*Do you know*

that man going down the road?" Here the verb "know" simply means recognise, therefore the Irish is: *Óruit aithe agat ar an bfean roin atá ag dul síor an bótar?* If you say to a fellow-student "*Do you know your lessons to-day?*" You mean "Do you know them by rote?" or "Have you studied them?" Hence the Irish would be: "*Óruit eolar agat ar do ceachtannaib iníu?*"

Notice also the following translations of the verb *know*.

<i>ir maic ir eol dom,</i>	'Tis well I know.
<i>ir fearac (feapac) dom,</i>	I know.
<i>deirim an puo atá ar</i>	I say what I know.
<i>eolar agam,</i>	

### I LIKE, I PREFER.

641. "*I like*" and "*I prefer*" are translated by the expressions *ir maic* (áil, áit) *liom* and *ir fearp liom* (it is good with me; and, it is better with me).

I like milk.	<i>ir maic liom bainne.</i>
He prefers milk to wine.	<i>ir fearp leir bainne ná fíon.</i>
Does the man like meat?	<i>An maic leir an bfean feoil?</i>
Did you like that?	<i>Ar maic leat é sin?</i>
I liked it.	<i>Óa maic liom é.</i>
We did not like the water.	<i>Níor maic linn an t-uirge.</i>

642. If we change the preposition "le" in the above sentences, for the preposition "do," we get

another idiom. "It is really good for," "It is of benefit to." *Ír maít òom é.* It is good for me; (*whether I like it or not*).

He does not like milk but it is good for him.

*Ní maít leir bainne áct ír maít òó é.*

**N.B.**—In these and like idiomatic expressions the preposition "le" conveys the person's own ideas and feelings, whether these are in accordance with fact or not. *Ír fíú uíom òul go h-Albain.* I think it is worth my while to go to Scotland (*whether it is really the case or not*). *Ír móir uíom an tuac roin.* I think that a great price. *Ír ruapac uíom é rin.* I think that trifling (*another person may not*).

The word "think" in such phrases is not translated into Irish.

*Ír fíú òuit òul go h-Albain.* It is really worth your while to go to Scotland (*whether you think so or not*).

### ṬÍṢ UÍOM, I CAN, I AM ABLE.

643. Although there is a regular verb *feudaim*, meaning *I can, I am able*, it is not always used. The two other expressions often used to translate the English verb "*I can*," are *ṭíṣ uíom* and *ír féirip uíom*.

The following examples will illustrate the uses of the verbs.

### Present Tense.

φευδαίμ, τις υἱομ* or ἢ φέρωιρ υἱομ,†	}	I can, or am able.
φευδανν τῷ, τις λεατ or ἢ φέρωιρ λεατ. &c.,                      &c.		

### Negative.

ὅτι φευδαίμ, ἢ τις υἱομ; or ὅτι φέρωιρ υἱομ.	}	I cannot, I am not able.

### Interrogative.

Ἄν τις λεατ? or Ἄν φέρωιρ λεατ?	}	Can you? or are you able?

### Negative Interrogative.

ὃς τις λεῖρ? or ὃς φέρωιρ λεῖρ?	}	Can he not? or is he not able?

### Past Tense.

Ὅ' φευδαρ, τῷ υἱομ, or ὅο β' φέρωιρ υἱομ.	}	I could, or was able.

### Imperfect.

Ὅ' φευδαίνν, τῷ γεαυ υἱομ.	I used to be able.
----------------------------	--------------------

\* Literally: It comes with me

† It is possible with me.

## Future.

φευρατο, τιοφαιτο ιiom. I shall be able.

## Conditional.

Ο' φευραινη, το τιοφαιτο } I would be able.  
ιiom.

Νι φειοιη λειρ,

(He thinks) he cannot.

Νι φειοιη το,

He cannot (It is absolutely impossible for him).

## I MUST.

644. The verb "*must*," when it means necessity or duty, is usually translated by the phrase *νι φυλαην* or *καιτφρο*. This latter is really the third person singular, future tense of *καιτιμ*; but the present and other tenses are also frequently used. It may also be very neatly rendered by the phrase, *ιρ ειγειαν το* (lit. *it is necessary for*).

Νι φυλαην τομ, καιτφρο με, or } I must.  
ιρ ειγειαν τομ.

Νι φυλαην ουιτ, καιτφρο τα, or } You must.  
ιρ ειγειαν ουιτ.

Νι φυλαην τοδ, καιτφρο रे, or } He must.  
ιρ ειγειαν το  
&c., &c.

The English phrase "*have to*" usually means "*must*," and is translated like the above: as, *I have to go home now*. *Καιτφρο με του α πατε ανοιρ*.

The English verb "*must*," expressing duty or necessity, has no past tense of its own. The English past tense of it would be "*had to*:" as, "*I had to go away then.*" The Irish translation is as follows:—

Níor b'fúláir dom, Chaic mé, or } I had to.  
do b'éigean dom.

Níor b'fúláir duit, Chaic tú, or } You had to.  
do b'éigean duit.  
&c., &c.

The English verb "*must*" may also express a supposition; as in the phrase "*You must be tired.*" The simplest translation of this is "Ní fúláir go bfuil tuirse ort," or, "Ní fúláir nó tá tuirse ort." The phrase "ir coramaíl go," meaning "*It is probable that*," may also be used: as, ir coramaíl go bfuil tuirse ort.

The English phrase "*must have*" always expresses supposition, and is best translated by the above phrase followed by a verb in the past tense, as, "*You must have been hungry*," Ní fúláir go raib ocraí ort. *He must have gone out*, Ní fúláir go nveadhaid ré amach.

Ní fúláir gur éadair (or go nveadhaid) ré amach, is used in Munster

## I ESTEEM.

645. *I esteem* is translated by the phrase Tá meaf dgam ar. Literally, "*I have esteem on.*"



I esteem John.	Τά meap aγam ap ſeaγάν.
Did you esteem him?	Ραιb meap aγac αιp?
He says that he greatly esteems you.	Οειp pε zo bpuil meap món aige opcpa.

## I DIE.

**646.** Although there is a regular verb, *eug*, *die*, in Irish it is not often used; the phrase *geibim bás*, *I find death*, is usually employed now. The following examples will illustrate the construction:—

The old man died yesterday.	ῤuair an rean-ῤear bás inóe.
We all die.	ῤeibmīo uile bás.
I shall die.	ῤeóbaō bás.
They have just died.	Τάio tap éip bás o'ῤaγáil.
You must die.	Caicpīō tú bás o'ῤaγáil.

## I OWE.

**647.** There is no verb “*owe*” in Irish, Its place is supplied by saying “*There is a debt on a person.*”

Τά pīac* opm.	<i>I owe.</i>
---------------	---------------

Whenever the amount of the debt is expressed the word *pīac* is usually omitted and the sum substituted.

He owes a pound.	Τά pūnc αιp.
You owe a shilling.	Τά pšilling opc.

---

\* The plural of this word, *pīaca*, is very frequently used in this phrase.



When the person to whom the money is due is mentioned, the construction is a little more difficult: as, *I owe you a pound* as,  $\tau\acute{\alpha}$   $\pi\acute{\upsilon}\nu\tau$   $\alpha\varsigma\alpha\tau$   $\omicron\rho\mu$ , i.e., You have (*the claim of*) a pound on me—the words in brackets being always omitted.

He owes me a crown.	$\tau\acute{\alpha}$ $\kappa\omicron\rho\acute{\omicron}\mu$ $\alpha\varsigma\alpha\mu$ $\alpha\iota\mu$ .
Here is the man to whom	$\text{Seo } \acute{\epsilon} \text{ an } \text{fear } \Delta \text{ (go)}$
you owe the money.	$\text{b}\acute{\rho}\mu\iota\text{t an } \tau\text{-}\alpha\iota\mu\text{g}\alpha\alpha\theta$ $\alpha\iota\mu\text{g}\epsilon \text{ o}\rho\tau\text{.}$

### I MEET.

648. The verb "*meet*" is usually translated by the phrase "*there is turned on,*" e.g., "*I meet a man*" is translated by saying "*A man is turned on me.*"  $\kappa\alpha\tau\alpha\rho\iota$   $\text{fear } \omicron\rho\mu$  ( $\mu\omicron\mu$  or  $\acute{\upsilon}\omicron\mu$ ); but the phrase  $\text{b}\acute{\upsilon}\alpha\iota\tau\epsilon\alpha\rho$  (or  $\tau\acute{\alpha}\rho\iota\alpha$ )  $\text{fear } \omicron\rho\mu$  is also used. *I met the woman*,  $\tau\omicron$   $\kappa\alpha\rho\alpha\theta$   $\text{an } \text{b}\acute{\epsilon}\alpha\mu$   $\omicron\rho\mu$  ( $\mu\omicron\mu$  or  $\acute{\upsilon}\omicron\mu$ ).

They met two men on the	$\tau\omicron$ $\kappa\alpha\rho\alpha\theta$ $\text{b}\acute{\epsilon}\iota\mu\tau$ $\text{fear } \text{o}\rho\tau\alpha$
road.	$\alpha\rho$ $\text{an } \text{m}\acute{\omicron}\delta\acute{\omicron}\tau\alpha\rho$ .
I met John.	$\text{b}\acute{\upsilon}\alpha\iota\tau$ $\text{Seag}\acute{\alpha}\mu$ $\text{umam}$ .

### Physical Sensations.

649. All physical sensations, such as hunger, thirst, weariness, pain, &c., are translated into Irish by saying that "*hunger, thirst, &c., is on a person;*" as, I

am hungry. *Ṭá ocrair orm.* Literally, *hunger is on me.* He is thirsty. *Ṭá tairt air.* Literally, *thirst is on him.*

The same idiom is used for emotions, such as *pride, joy, sorrow, shame, &c.* The following examples will illustrate the construction:—

<i>Ṭfuil ocrair ort?</i>	Are you hungry?
<i>Ní fuil ocrair orm anois.</i>	I am not hungry now.
<i>Ṭí an-tairt orainn inoé.</i>	} We were very thirsty yesterday.
<i>Ṭí ana tairt orainn inoé.</i>	
<i>Ṭfuil náire ort?</i>	Are they ashamed?
<i>Ṭí náire an traoḡail uirthi.</i>	She was very much ashamed.
<i>Ṭéirḡ bróḡ mór air.</i>	He will be very proud.
<i>Raib tuirre ort?</i>	Were you tired?
<i>Ná bíḡ eḡla ort.</i>	Don't be afraid.
<i>Ṭá ana coḡlaḡ orm.</i>	I am very sleepy.
<i>Ṭá rlaḡoán ort.</i>	You have a cold.

Whenever there is a simple adjective in Irish corresponding to the English adjective of *mental* or *physical sensation*, we have a choice of two constructions, as:—

I am cold.	<i>Ṭá mé fuar</i>	or <i>Ṭá fuact* orm.</i>
You are sick.	<i>Ṭá tú tinn</i> (or <i>breoite</i> )	„ <i>Ṭá tinnear ort.</i>
I was weary.	<i>Ṭí mé tuirread</i>	„ <i>Ṭí tuirre orm.</i>

\* Distinguish between *rlaḡoán* a cold (a disease) and *fuact*, the cold, coldness (of the weather) and the adjective *fuar*, cold.

Τά μέ τινν and τά τινnear ορμ have not quite the same meaning, Τά μέ τινν means *I feel sick*; but τά τινnear ορμ means *I am in some sickness, such as fever, &c.*

### I CANNOT HELP.

650. The English phrase "I cannot help that," is translated by saying *I have no help on that*. ní fúil nearc agam air rin. The word leigear, "*cure*," may be used instead of nearc.

When "*cannot help*" is followed by a present participle in English, use ní {féadaim  
féidir liom} san, with verbal noun: as, *I cannot help laughing*, ní {féadaim  
féidir liom} san gáiríde.

### I AM ALONE.

651. There are two expressions which translate the English word "*alone*" in such sentences as I am alone, He is alone, &c., i.e., Táim im donar, or Táim liom féin (I am in my oneship, or I am by (with) myself). He is alone. Tá ré na donar, or Tá ré leir féin. She was alone. Bí sí 'na n-donar, or Bí sí léiti féin. We shall be alone. Béimro 'nár n-donar. or béimro linn féin.

### I ASK.

652. The English word "*ask*" has two distinct meanings according as it means "*beseech*" or "*inquire*." In Irish there are two distinct verbs, viz.,

ἵαμμαίμ, I ask (*for a favour*), and ῥῑαῤῥυῖςίμ, I ask (*for information*). Before translating the word “ask” we must always determine what is its real meaning, and then use ἵαῤῥ or ῥῑαῤῥυῖς accordingly.

Ask your friend for money. ἵαῤῥ αῖῖḡεαῶ αῖ ῑῶ  
ḡαῖαῶ.

Ask God for those graces. ἵαῤῥ αῖ ῑῑα ἢα ḡῖῖῖῖῖῖ  
ῖῖῖῖ ḡ ḡῑῑῑῖῖῖῖ ῑῑῖῖ.

Ask him what o'clock it is. ῥῑαῤῥυῖς ῑῖ ḡῑῶ ḡ ḡῖῖḡ ḡ.  
He asked us who was that ῑῑ' ῥῑαῤῥυῖς ῖῖ ῑῑῖῖ ḡῑῖῖ  
at the door. ῑῑ' ῖῖ ḡῖ ḡῖ ḡῑῖῖῖ.

They asked me a question. ῑῑ'ῥῑαῤῥυῖςḡῑῖῖ ḡῖῖῖ  
ῑῑῖῖῖ.

## 653.

## I DO NOT CARE.

I do not care.	ἱῖ ḡῑῖῖ ḡῑῖῖ.
It is no affair of mine.	ἱῖ ḡῑῖῖ ῑῑῖῖ.
Is it not equal to you?	ḡῑḡ ḡῑῖῖ ῑῑῖῖ?
It is no affair of yours.	ἱῖ ḡῑῖῖ ῑῑῖῖ.
You don't care.	ἱῖ ḡῑῖῖ ḡῑῖῖ.
He does not care.	ἱῖ ḡῑῖῖ ḡῑῖῖ.
It is no affair of his.	ἱῖ ḡῑῖῖ ῑῑῖ.
We did not care.	ῑῑ ḡῑῖῖ ḡῑῖῖ.
It was no affair of ours.	ῑῑ ḡῑῖῖ ῑῑῖῖῖῖ.
They did not care.	ῑῑ ḡῑῖῖ ḡῑῖῖ.

(See what has been said about the prepositions ḡῑ and ῑῑ in the Idiom “I prefer,” par. 642.)

## I OUGHT.

654. "*I ought*" is translated by the phrase *ir cóir* (or *ceart*) *dom*. You ought, *ir cóir duit*, *ir ceart duit*. We ought to go home, *ir cóir dúinn out a baire*. We ought to have gone home, *bá cóir dúinn out a baire*. As the word "*ought*" has no inflection for the past tense in English, it is necessary to use the *past infinitive in English* to express past time. But as the Irish expression, *ir cóir*, has a past tense (*bá cóir*) the *simple verbal noun* is always used in Irish in such expressions.

Ought you not have gone to Derry with them? *Náir cóir duit out go Doirte leo?*

He ought not have gone away. *Níor cóir dó imcheacht.*

English Dependent Phrases translated by the  
Verbal Noun.

655. Instead of the usual construction, consisting of a verb in a finite tense followed by its subject (a noun or a pronoun), we very frequently meet in Irish with the following construction. The English finite verb is translated by the Irish verbal noun, and the English subject is placed before the verbal noun. If the subject be a noun it is in the *nominative form*, but if a pronoun in the *disjunctive form*.

The following examples will exemplify the idiom:—

I'd prefer *that he should be*    *Do b'fearr uíom é ro*  
*there rather than my-*    *beir ann ná mire.*  
*self.*

Is it not better for us that    *Nac fearr úinn san iad*  
*these should not be in*    *ro ro beir in an mbád.*  
*the boat.*

I saw John when he was    *Connaic mé Seagán agus*  
*coming home.*    *é as teacht a baile.*

I knew him *when I was a*    *Ói aithe agusam air agus*  
*boy.*    *mé im buachaill.*

The clock struck *just as*    *Ro buail an clog agus é*  
*he was coming in.*    *as teacht irteac.*

## Idiomatic Expressions.

## CUIR.

Cuir ormra é.	Say it was I did it.
Cuirimpe ortra é.	I say it was you did it.
Cuir umat (ort).	Dress yourself.
Cuir an tairt go móir air.	Thirst annoyed him greatly.
Cuirfeadh tu d'fíadaib' ort rtao.	I'll make you stop.
Cuir iadall air é (a) téanamh.	Make him do it.
Ná cuir orm γ ní cuirfeadh ort.	Don't interfere with me and I will not interfere with you.
Cuir ré a mhán.	He tracked him (her, them).
Cuir ré rtró orm.	He addressed me.
Cuir ré rpeic (or fupán) orm.	
Cuirfeadh rómam a téanamh.	I resolved to do it.
Tá cuir ríor (tráct or iomráo) ar an gcogad.	There is talk about the war.
Cuir ré culao éadaiḡ dá téanamh.	He got a suit of clothes made.
Cuir ré 'na luige orm.	He convinced me of it.
Cuir i gcár sup raiḡuúr mire.	Suppose me to be a soldier.
Cuir ar bun.	Established.
Cuir (bain) ré faoi i gCorcaig.	He settled down in Cork.
Tá ré ag cuir 'r ag cúiteamh.	He is debating in his mind.



## ΤΑΘΑΙΡ.

Ταθαίρ ρυαρ.	Surrender.
Τά ρέ ταθαίρτα.	He is played out.
Τά ρέ buailte ρυαρ.	
Τα ρέ τυγτα (ταθαίρτα) το'ν λοέτ ραν.	He is <i>addicted</i> to that vice.
Ταθαίρ το όρουμ λειρ.	Turn your back to him.
Τυγαρ ρέ νθεάρ(α) αν ρολαρ.	I noticed the light.
Τά ρέ ταθαίρτα ρυαρ.	He has been given up for dead.
Τυγ ρέ ρυαρ.	He gave in.
Τά ταθαίρτα ρυαρ αιγε.	He <i>has given in</i> .
Ιρ θεαταιρρίμιννε γέιτεαδ το ταθαίρτ ο'ά έείτε.	It is hard to <i>reconcile</i> truth and falsehood.
Τά ταθαίρτ ρυαρ μόρ αιρ.	He is <i>highly educated</i> .

## ΘΕΑΝ.

Θέαν ρυο αρ το μάταιρ.	Obey your mother.
Νί θέανραδ ρέ ρυο ορμ.	He would not <i>oblige</i> me.
Ναέ μαίτ ναέ νθεάρναιρ ρέιν έ!	How well you didn't do it yourself!
Ναέ μαίτ ná θέανανν tú ρέιν ρυο αρ το μάταιρ?	Why don't you obey your mother yourself?
Νυαιρ τυγεαταρ α ρεαθαρ το όνιρ (ρυννιρ) αν θεαρτ.	When they understood how well you had done the trick.
Θέαν αιρε (το) ταθαίρτ τοο ξνό ρέιν.	Mind your own business.
Θέαν το ξνό ρέιν.	
Ταθαίρ αιρε τοο ξνό ρέιν.	

Óéan na ba do éruð Milk the cows.

(bleáḡan).

An nbeápnair an doḡur Did you shut the door?

do dúnad?

Tá ré aḡ óéanam orainn. He is coming towards us.

### imtiḡ.

Conur (cionnur) o' imtiḡ How did he *get on*?

leir?

Cad o' imtiḡ air?

{What *became* of him?

{What *happened* to him?

Nuair tuiteann rud mar  
reo amad.

When something like this  
*happens*.

Cad imteoḡar orm?

(Creud éireoḡar dom?)

} What *will become* of me?

### ná.

Óob' é an céad tóine do  
buaíl uime ná Seáḡán  
liat.

The first person he met  
was Seáḡán liat.

Ir é rud óob' fearr leir  
feircint ná na Sapanais  
ḡo léir o'á noibirt ar  
éirinn..

What he wished most to  
see was the banishment  
of the whole of the  
English from Ireland.

Ir é rud do tús anoir cum  
cainte leat mé ná mé  
beir i ḡcruad-cár.

What brought me to talk  
with you now is the fact  
that I am in difficulty.

Ir é rud do punne (óein)  
an fear ná caiteam leo.

What the man did was to  
throw at them.

Ir é ruo do dein Séamar annrain nÁ i bponnad air.	What James did then was to make him a present of it.
Ir é ruo doireadó sac éinne nÁ gur maic air.	What everyone used to say was that it was a great blessing for him.

## mÓR.

Ir mór le rá é.	It is <i>important</i> .
Ir mór le maoidéam é.	It is a thing to be proud of, or boast about.
Níor mór le rá é.	It was not of much importance.
Ní mór dom filleadó.	I <i>must</i> return.
Ní mór dom gluaisead.	I must take my departure.
Ní mór linn duit.	We have no objection to your doing so.
Ní mór liom dó é.	I don't <i>grudge</i> it to him.
Ní mór nac (nÁ go) bfuil ré déanta.	It is <i>almost</i> done.
Ní mór ná go mbeid ré críochnuigte.	It will be nearly finished.
Cá mór dom, &c.?	<i>Why shouldn't I, &amp;c.?</i> lit., how is it too much for me?
Nac mór a d' éirigh tú!	How grand you have got!
Ní móide (mó + de) go raibid.	It is not <i>likely</i> that I shall go.

## beas.

1r beas liom é.	I <i>consider</i> it too small.
1r beas orm é.	I don't like it at all.
1r beas agam é.	I have no great opinion of him.
1r beas an rgeal é.	It's no great harm. He is not to be pitied.
1r beas an cabair tú.	You are not of much use.
1r beas dá fíor agat.	'Tis little you know.
1r beas naé mictio do beit ag imteacht.	It is <i>nearly</i> time for him to be going.
Da beas ná mictio do beit ag imteacht.	It was nearly time-for him to be going.
1r beas a bprís é.	It is a trifle.
1r beas má tá éinne i n-Éirinn o' féadfaid é déanamh.	<i>There is hardly</i> a person in Ireland who could do it.

## Miscellaneous.

An éireodair (ré) linn?	Shall we <i>succeed</i> ?
Bí ré ag éirge fuair.	It was <i>getting</i> cold.
Mair an áit go maíar!	Well said! or Well done!
Mair mar tárla.	It has happened luckily.
Níor labair ré fiú don focail amáin.	He did not speak a <i>single</i> word.
San fiú na h-anála do tarraing (tarac).	Without <i>even</i> taking breath.
Fiú ár ndaoine féin.	<i>Even</i> our own people.

Tá ré ag dul i bfeabhar.	He is <i>getting better</i> .
Tá ré ag dul i n-olcar.	He is <i>getting worse</i> .
Abair é!	Hear! hear! Bravo!
Ní cuimhin liom a leicéir.	I don't remember <i>the like of it</i> .
Ó tárla an leabhar agam anois.	As I <i>happen to have</i> the book now.
Tá ré geall le beirt pollamh } Tá ré pollamh naic mór. }	It is <i>almost empty</i> .
Ní fuit dul uaird agat.	You cannot <i>avoid it</i> .
Tá an fear ran ag dul i mbeo oim.	That man's conduct <i>cuts me to the quick</i> .
Tá ré i muict báir. } Tá ré le h-uict báir. }	He is at <i>the point of death</i> .
Ir millte (ac) an rgeal é.	It is a <i>terrible affair</i> .
Ir cailte an lá é le fluice.	It is a <i>terribly wet day</i> .
Sgeal gan vac.	A <i>very unlikely</i> story.
Leis (leog) dom féin leov' cuio cainte.	Don't annoy me with your <i>talk</i> .
Cao é an cuio atá agat ra de?	What right (call) have you to it?
An cuio ir luza de dá uair ra mbliadain.	At least <i>twice a year</i> .
Corp na h-éagcóra.	The <i>essence of wrong</i> .
Le corp díomhaoinir.	Through <i>downright laziness</i> .
Tá rmut de'n ceart aige.	He is <i>partly right</i> .
Ir leam an gnó duit é.	'Tis an <i>absurd thing</i> for you to do.

Cao 'na t-aob ná cean-  
nuigeann tú bróga dúit  
féin? Gan an t-airgead  
do beir agam.

Tá ré ar nór cuma liom.  
Cé tá ar ár dtí?  
Tá ré ar do tí.

Daoine nác mé .  
Bí ceo r-aor aige ar túl.  
Ir dual achar dó.  
Bí mo turar i n-airdear.  
Ca leigeann cú a leap.  
Sogaille só.

Beiré ran 'na mairle 7 'na  
súit ar a gclú an dá lá  
'r an fáir a beiré srian  
ra rpeir.

Tá ré beagán fuar.  
Tá ré poinnt boðar.  
Tá ré gan beiré ar fógham,  
Ní fuil an t-uall ro  
aibíó i scear.  
Ní cúrraíóe gáiríóe é.  
Do gáirfá, mura mbeaó  
nác cúir gáiríóe é.

Why don't you buy boots  
for yourself? *Because*  
I have not the money.

He is *indifferent*.  
Who is *intending* us harm?  
He is bent on attacking  
you. He intends to  
harm you.

Others *besides* myself.  
He had *permission* to go.  
He has it from his father.  
My journey was *in vain*.  
You need not.  
A fool's errand; a wild  
goose chase.

That will be a reproach  
and a blot on their  
fame the *longest day* the  
sun will be in the sky.

It is a little cold.  
He is *somewhat* deaf.  
He is a *little unwell*.  
This apple is not *quite*  
ripe.  
It is nothing to laugh at.  
You would laugh only  
that it is not a matter  
to laugh at.

Ní cúrraíde cainte é.	It is nothing to talk about.
Tarraing eugat rud éigin eile mar cúrraíde mágaró.	Find something else to make fun about.
Cao é an gnó atá agat oe? Do baineat iarraect oe geit ar.	What do you want it for? He was <i>slightly</i> startled.
Ní fuit don gar ag d'péim leir an mballa.	There's no use trying to get up on the wall.
Ní raib don maitear 'na glór.	<i>In vain</i> did he cry (talk, speak).
Ní móirde sup r'griob ré an litir.	<i>Perhaps</i> he did <i>not</i> write the letter.
Tabaim lem' air rin do d'éanam.	I <i>propose</i> to do that.
Tá buídeac ar agam ort (fé) Táim buídeac díot (fé.)	I am <i>thankful</i> to you ( <i>for</i> ).
Beirim buídeac duit mar geall (glóil) air.	
Tabaim buídeac leat mar geall air.	I <i>thank</i> you <i>for</i> it.
Beiró tú d'éanac (d'éirde- nac) ag an traen.	
Beiró tú d'éanac ar r'gort.	You will be late <i>for</i> school.
Dí cuir aca gá ráib go raib beirte (beirte) ar an mbiteamnac.	Some of them were saying that the rascal was caught.
Éireodair a éiríde ar Diamuir.	It will <i>break</i> Dermot's heart.



- Sgaric riad ar gáiríob. They burst out *laughing*.  
 Munab ort adá an éaint ! What talk you have ! If  
 it isn't you have the  
 talk.
- Luis an éaint go léir ar The whole conversation  
 an matalong a bí turned on the misfor-  
 imtígte ar šaob. tune which *had befallen*  
 Sive.
- Ilíor imtígt ortá áct an They only got what they  
 ruo a bí tuillte aca. *had deserved*.
- Teip orainn teacé ruar We failed to overtake  
 leo. them.
- Tá ré ag déanam aicéir He is *mimicking* his man-  
 ar a éaint. ner of talking.
- Tá ré ar an bpeap ir He is *the richest man* in  
 raíobpe ra Mumain. Munster.
- Ir dóca sup dóic leo. Probably they *imagine*.  
 Tá ré buailte irteac im I am *firmly convinced*.  
 aigne.
- Loirgead iad 'na mbeataid. They were burnt *alive*.  
 Cao adéanfad cor ar bit What will I do at all *with*  
 aise ? him ?
- Bí bpeir mhór 7 a sceart They were getting a great  
 aca dá fashál. deal *more than* their  
 right.
- Bí coróin fé'n bpúnt aca They were getting five  
 dá fashál. shillings *in the pound*.
- Bí gac uile óuine ag Everyone was *sympathis-*  
 déanam truaig (truaig) ing with her.  
 oi.

- Comnaoip do Sheagán an té ba fine aca.  
 Ba dóic leat air gur leir an áit.  
 Ní raib a tualurg ann.  
 Com mairt agus dá mba ná raib éagóir ar bit ann.  
 O'fiasruig ré cao fé nveár an rult.  
 Cé'r a mac tú?  
 Ní mairpear puinn tuit.  
 Ca b'fior tuit?  
 A rgeal féin rgeal gac éinne.  
 Tura fé nveár poin.  
 Tá gnó nac é agam.  
 Ní tairpe dom féin.
- The eldest of them was the same age as John.  
 You (one) *would imagine* by him that he owned the place.  
 There wasn't a trace of him there.  
 Just as if it were not wrong.  
 He asked *what was the cause* of the merriment.  
 Whose son are you?  
 You will meet *your match*.  
 How did you know?  
 Everyone is most interested in his own affairs.  
 You are the cause of that.  
 I have a *different matter* to look after.  
 I am *no exception*; i.e., I am the same as the others.

### The Autonomous Form of the Irish Verb.

It is sometimes necessary or convenient to express an action without mentioning the subject, either because the latter is too general or not of sufficient importance to be mentioned, or because there is some other reason for suppressing it. Most languages have felt this necessity, and various means have been adopted to supply it. The use of the passive voice, or of reflexive verbs, or of circumlocutions, is the method generally adopted in other languages. In Irish there is a special form of the verb for this purpose. As it has no subject expressed it is sometimes called the **Indefinite** form of the verb: as it forms a complete sentence in itself it is also called the **Autonomous** or **Independent** form.

An English verb cannot stand without its subject. For example, "walks," "walked," etc., express nothing. The English verbs cannot alone make complete sense. The Autonomous form of Irish verbs can stand alone. The word "Buailtear" is a complete sentence. It means that "*the action of striking takes place.*" The Autonomous form stands without a subject; in fact it cannot be united to a subject, because the moment we express a subject the ordinary 3rd person singular form of the particular tense and mood must be substituted. Buailtear an borb. *Someone (they, people, we, etc.) strikes the table*; but buailteann an fear (sé, siad, na daoine, etc.) an borb.

We shall take the sentence: Buailtear an gárb le cloic ó lámh éirí. The word "buailtear" of itself conveys a complete statement, viz., that *the action of*

*striking takes place.* The information given by the single word “*buailtear*” is restricted to the action. There are circumstances surrounding that action of which we may wish to give information; *e.g.* “What is the object of the action?” “*An gáthar.*” “What is the instrument used?” “*Le cloic.*” “Where did the stone come from?” “*Ó lámh éadú.*” We may thus fill in any number of circumstances we please, and fit them in their places by means of the proper prepositions, but these circumstances do not change the nature of the fundamental word “*buailtear.*”

It may be objected that the word “*buailtear*” in the last sentence is passive voice, present tense, and means “*is struck,*” and that “*An gáthar*” is the subject of the verb. Granted for a moment that it is passive voice. Now since “*Buailteann tuine éigin é,*” *somebody strikes him*, is active voice, as all admit, and by supposition “*buailtear é,*” *somebody strikes him*, or, *he is struck*, is passive, then comes the difficulty, what voice is “*tágtar buailte,*” *somebody is struck*? Surely it is the passive of “*buailtear*”; and if so “*buailtear*” itself cannot be passive, though it may be rendered by a passive in English. If we are to be guided merely by the English equivalent, then “*buailteann*” in the above phrase is as much a passive voice as “*buailtear,*” because it can be correctly translated into English by a passive verb: *viz., He is struck.*

When we come to consider this form in intransitive verbs, our position becomes much stronger in favour of the Autonomous verb. Let us consider the following sentence: *Siubáltar ar an mbótar nuair bíonn*

an bótar tirim, áit nuair bíonn an bótar fliú, riuðaltar ar an gclaiúe. *People walk on the road when it is dry, but when the road is wet they walk on the path.* Where is the nominative case of the so called passive verb here? Evidently there is none. The verb stands alone and conveys complete sense. If we wish to express the nominative, the Autonomous form of the verb cannot be used. In the above sentence we might correctly say: Siubhlann ré (riaó, rinne, na daoine, etc.), but not riuðaltar é (iaó, rinne, na daoine, etc.)

Probably classical scholars will draw analogies from Latin and quote such instances as, *Concurritur ad muros. Ventum est ad Vestae. Sic itur ad astra. Deinde venit ad portam*; where we have intransitive verbs in an undoubtedly passive construction, and therefore, by analogy, the true signification of riuðaltar in the above sentence is "*It is walked*," and it is simply an example of the *impersonal passive construction*. Now, if conclusions of any worth are to be drawn from analogies, the analogies themselves must be complete. The classical form corresponding to the Irish Bítear as riuðal ar an mbótar nuair bíonn an bótar tirim, etc., or tátear as riuðal ar an mbótar anois is wanting, and therefore the analogy is incomplete and deductions from it are of little value.

One of the strongest arguments we have in favour of the Autonomous verb is the fact that the verb "to be" in Irish possesses every one of the forms possessed by transitive and intransitive verbs. The analogy with Latin again fails here. Tátear as teacht,

*Somebody is coming. Beiríofar as riubál, Somebody will be walking. Nuair mótuig an t-ádh go rabófar as ceangailt a cor, When the giant perceived that they were binding his legs.*

The Irish Autonomous form cannot be literally translated into English, because no exact counterpart exists in English, hence the usual method of translating this form is to use the English passive voice, but the Irish verb is not therefore passive. To give an instance of the incapability of the English language to express *literally* the force of the Autonomous verb, notice the English translation of the subjoined example of the continued use of the Autonomous verb in an Irish sentence.

“Áit ana-aepead ir ead an áit rin: nuair bítear as gabáil an tpeo rain i n-am maipb na h-oirde, aipítear coiríbead t’á véanain 7 foctiom mar beiríbe as iut 7 foctiom eile mar beiríbe as teicead, 7 annrain aipítear foctiom mar tiocfaíbe ruar 7 mar buailíbe 7 mar beiríbe faoi bualaó 7 mar bripíbe, 7 annrain aipítear mar bead veapz-ruatár 7 cóir.”

This passage cannot be literally translated: the following will give a fair idea of its meaning: “That place is frequented by fairies: when one is walking near it in the dead stillness of the night, footsteps are heard and loud noises, as if people were running and fleeing, and then other noises are heard as if people were overtaking (those who were running away), and were striking and being struck, and as if they were being broken in pieces, and then are heard noises as if they were in hot rout and pursuit.”



The Autonomous form of the verb has a passive voice of its own formed by the addition of the verbal adjective (or past participle) of the verb to the Autonomous forms of the verb *to be*; e.g., *ἑάταρ βυαίτε*, etc.

This form of the Irish verb has a full conjugation through all the moods and tenses, active and passive voices; but has only one form for each tense. All verbs in Irish, with the single exception of the assertive verb *ἵρ*, have this form of conjugation. *ἵρ* can have no Autonomous form, because *ἵρ* has no meaning by itself. It is as meaningless as the sign of equality (=) until the terms are placed one on each side of it.

To sum up then, the Irish Autonomous form is not passive, for—

(1) All verbs (except *ἵρ*), transitive and intransitive, even the verb *τά*, have this form of conjugation.

(2) This form has a complete passive voice of its own

(3) The disjunctive forms of the personal pronouns are always used with it; e.g., *βυαίτεσθ εἰ*.

(4) Very frequently when a personal pronoun is the object of the Autonomous form of the verb, it is placed last in the sentence or clause to which it belongs, thus giving a very close analogy with the construction of the active verb, already explained in par. 535. *Ἠνὸν εἰς ὅσον ὡς... ἕως τοῦτο ἵρτεσθ ἵρ σκότῃ τοῦ μέ... It was not long until I was driven into this wood. Ὁ τοῖς ἑαταρὸς ὁ ἡ-α ἕσπεσθταῖς ἵατο. They were healed of their wounds.*

(5) Lastly, and the strongest point of all, in the



minds of *native* Irish speakers, without exception, the word *buaitear* in such sentences as "*buaitear an gaoth*" is *active*, and *gaoth* is its object. Surely those Irish speakers are the best judges of the true shape of their own thoughts.

We will now give a synopsis of the various forms of the Autonomous verb, beginning with the verb *τά*.

### The Verb *τά*.

τᾶταρ.*	Someone, we, they, people, etc.	is, are.
ní fúiltear.†		is not, are not.
bítear (bítear).		does be, do be.
ní bítear.		does not be, do not be.
bítear (bítear).		was, were.
ní raibítear.		was not, were not.
bítí.		used to be.
beirar, beiréar, beir- éar, béiréar.		will be.
beirí(óe), beirí(óe) béití.		would be.
bítear (Let).		be.
má tátar (If).		is, are.
má bítear (If).		does be, do be.
etc.		
óá mbeirí (If).		were, would be.
go raibítear! (May).		be ( <i>for once</i> ).
go mbítear! (May).		be ( <i>generally</i> ).
Deirim go bfuiltear, I say that someone, etc., is.		
Deirim ná fúiltear,	"	" is not.

\* *τάταρ* or *τάτα'p*.

† *fuaitear*, *fuaitea'p*.

## An Intransitive Verb.

Siuðalţar.			walks, walk.
ţ���ar �� siu��al.			is (are) walking.
b���ar �� siu��al.			does (do) be walking.
siu��al��.			walked.
b���ar �� siu��al.			was (were) walking.
siu��al����.			used to walk.
b��� �� siu��al.			used to be walking.
siu��al��ar.			will walk.
be��ar �� siu��al.			will be walking.
siu��al����.			would walk.
be��� �� siu��al.			would be walking.
siu��al��ar	(Let).	Someone, we, they, people, etc.	walk.
b���ar �� siu��al	(Let).		be walking.
m�� siu��al��ar	(If).		is (are) walking.
etc.			
�� siu��al����	(If).		would be walking.
�� mbe��� �� siu��al	(If).		were walking.

## A Transitive Verb.

A noun is placed after the active forms in order to show the cases.

�����ar an ����.	Someone strikes the table.
����ar �� ����� an ����.	Someone is striking the table.
�� an ���� �� (��) �����.	The table is being struck.
����ar �����.	Someone is struck.
����ar �� �����,	Someone is being struck.
����ar �� ����� an ����.	Someone usually strikes the table.
�� ������ an ����.	Someone struck the table.

Úitear a5 bualað an clár.	Someone was striking the table.
Úi an clár 'd' (5á) bualað.	The table was being struck.
Úitear buailte.	Someone was struck.
Úitear fé bualað.	Someone was being struck.
Buailtí an clár.	Someone used to strike the table.
Úití a5 bualað an clár.	Someone used to be striking the table.
Úití buailte.	Someone used to be struck.
Buailfear (buailfeár) an clár.	Someone will strike the table.
Beifear a5 bualað an clár.	Someone will be striking the table.
Beifear buailte.	Someone will be struck.
Buailfí (buailfirde) an clár.	Someone would strike the table.
Beifí a5 bualað an clár.	Someone would be striking the table.
Beifí buailte.	Someone would be struck.
Buailtear an clár.	Let someone strike the table.
Úitear a5 bualað an clár.	Let someone be striking the table.
Má buailtear an clár.	If someone strikes the table.
Má úitear a5 bualað an clár.	If someone does be striking the table.
etc.	
'D' mbuailfí an clár.	If someone were to strike the table.

Ṫā mbeirí aḡ bualaḋ an If someone were to be  
 cláir. striking the table.

Before leaving this important subject it may not be uninteresting to see what some Irish grammarians have thought of the Autonomous form.

O'Donovan in his Irish Grammar (p. 183) wrote as follows :—

“ The passive voice has no synthetic form to denote persons or numbers ; the personal pronouns, therefore, must be always expressed, and placed after the verb ; and, by a strange peculiarity of the language, they are always ‘ *in the accusative form.*’

“ For this reason some Irish scholars have considered the passive Irish verb to be a form of the active verb, expressing the action in an indefinite manner ; as, buailtear mé, *i.e., some person or persons, thing or things, strikes or strike me* ; buailteḋ é, *some person or thing (not specified) struck him*. But it is more convenient in a practical grammar to call this form by the name passive, as in other languages, and to assume that tú, é, í, and iḋo, which follow it, are ancient forms of the nominative case.”

Molloy says in his Grammar, page 62 :—

“ Verbs have a third form which may be properly called deponent ; as buailtear mé, *I am (usually) beaten* ; buailtear ú, *thou art (usually) beaten* ; buailtear é, *he is (usually) beaten*. The agent of this form of the verb is never known ; but although verbs of this form always govern the objective case, like active verbs, still *they must be rendered in English*

by the passive; as, *buaiteadh iad*, they were beaten. Here *iad* is quite passive to the action; for it suffers the action which is performed by some unknown agent."

Again at page 99, he says:—

"But there is another form of the verb **which always governs an objective case**; and although it must be translated into the passive voice in English, still it is a deponent, and not a passive, form in Irish; as, *buaitear mé*, etc. The grammarians who maintain that this form of the verb takes a nominative case clearly show that they did not speak the language; for no Irish-speaking person would say *buaitear é, í, iad*, are nominatives in Irish, although they be found so in Scotch Gaelic."

Further on, at page 143, he states again that "deponent verbs govern an objective case."

Thus we plainly see that O'Donovan and Molloy bear out the fact that the noun or pronoun after the Autonomous form of the verb is in the **accusative case**, though the former says it is more convenient to assume that it is in the *nominative case*!

# APPENDICES.

## Appendix I.

### NOUNS OF THE FIRST DECLENSION.

ἀδρᾶν, a song.	καρβας, chariot.
ἀόαρταρ, a halter.	καρῆν, heap.
ἀόδαρ, a cause.	καρᾶν, path.
ἀύμασ, wood.	καρῦν, hammer.
ἀματόαν, a fool.	κατ, cat.
ἀμᾶρις, a sight.	κεᾶνν, head or end.
ἀμῆμαρ, doubt.	κεολ, music; pl. κεοιτα.
δοιῶνεαρ, delight.	κευτολῶγαδ,† breakfast.
δοιτεαδ, manure.	κινεάλ, kind or sort.
δοι, lime.	κτεσᾶνναρ, marriage alliance
αριᾶν, bread.	κτείμεαδ, clerk
αριτόαν, hillock.	κτογ, bell, clock.
αριμ, an army: pl. αριμ, αριμα.	κογᾶδ, war; pl. κογῆα or
ατ, swelling or tumour.	κογᾶιθε.
ἀταρ, gladness.	κοπάν, cup.
	κριεθεαῖν, faith, religion.
βάσ, boat.	κυαν, bay or haven; pl. κυαντα.
βαλῶάν, dummy. (stammerer).	κυῶδαρ, foam.
βάρμ, top.	κύλ, back of the head.
βάρ, death.	
βεαζᾶν, a little.	καοι, beetle.
βιαδ, food; gen. βιῶ.	κειμεαδ, end.
βιοῖᾶν, a pin.	κιδᾶλ, devil.
βιτεσᾶνναδ, rascal.	κιννευρ, dinner.
βλαρ, taste.	κοῶδαρ, harm.
βονν, sole, foundation.	κοιῶεαλλ, grudge, reserve.
βόταρ, road; nom. pl. βόιτμε.	κοῶμαν, earth, world.
βματόαν, a salmon.	κοναρ, misfortune.
βμόσ, joy, pride.	κομαρ, door; pl. κοιμρε.
βμομαδ, foal or colt.	κουαδ, difficulty.
βμόν, sorrow.	κούτταρ, inherited instinct.
βμουαδ, brink; pl. βμουατα.	
βυιῶεαδταρ, thanks.	εαριβαλλ, a tall.
βυν, bottom.	εαριμαδ, Spring.
	ειῶεαν, ivy.
καίρεατ,* a stone fortress.	εολαρ, knowledge.
καλαδ, harbour.	ευαδ, cloth, clothes.

\* This word also means a child's spinning "top."

† In spoken language βρεικεαρτα, m., is used for "breakfast."

բարձած, } shelter.  
 բօրձած, }  
 բիւծ, raven; pl. բիւծ or բիւջ.  
 բօժ, a word; pl. բօժիւ or  
 բօժիւ.  
 Բօճմար, Autumn.  
 Բօն, tune or air.

Զածար, goat.  
 Զածար, beagle.  
 Զանոս, gauder.  
 Զարբն, a young boy.  
 Զարմար, green corn.  
 Զարբիւծ, young bird.  
 Զլար, lock.  
 Զլօր, voice.  
 Զօբ, beak (of a bird).  
 Զրեան, humour.  
 Զաւ, coal.

Իարան, iron.  
 (Բ)իօլար, eagle.  
 Իօնօ, place.  
 Իրեան, hollow.

Լօջ, calf.  
 Լին, middle.  
 Լեծար, a book; pl. Լեծարի,  
 Լեծիւ.  
 Լեծիւն, booklet.  
 Լեշար, leather.  
 Լեւն, misfortune.  
 Լիօն, a net; pl. Լիօնա.  
 Լիօն, provision.  
 Լօրի, a track.

Խօսած or Խօսա, a dog; pl.  
 Խօսիւծ.  
 Խաջած, mockery, ridicule.  
 Խօրի, a steward.  
 Խար, steer or beeve.  
 Խեւ, failure.  
 Խիլեան, blame.  
 Խիօնան, kid.  
 Խօրիան, much, many.

Խալած, top; pl. Խալիւծ.

Նօմ, a saint.  
 Նար, strength.  
 Օրար, hunger.  
 Օր, gold.

Քաջան, a pagan.  
 Քալար, paper.  
 Քիօն, windpipe or neck.  
 Քօր, tune or air.  
 Քրեւան, crow.

Ման, track; gen. ման.  
 Մօն, road.  
 Միւն, secret.

Քալ, a sack.  
 Քալար, a priest.  
 Քալար, kind or sort.  
 Քալան, salt.  
 Քամիւծ, summer.  
 Քալած, life, world.  
 Քալի, craftsman, artisan.  
 Քալար, exertion, work.  
 Քալած, hawk.  
 Քօս, a precious thing, jewel;  
 pl. Քօսա.  
 Քշու, news; pl. Քշուա;  
 Քշուա, stories.  
 Քալիւծ, chain; pl. Քալիւծիւ.  
 Քօր, wisp.  
 Քօր, } kind or sort  
 Քօր, }  
 Քրօն, a spirit.  
 Քրօր, a spur.  
 Քրօր, sport.  
 Քրօր, treasure store.  
 Քրօն, repose.

Քամիւ, a short space of time.  
 Քալիւծ, a captain, a leader.  
 Քալիւ, hearth.  
 Քրօն, furniture.  
 Քր, beginning.



## Appendix II.

A list of feminine nouns ending in a broad consonant, belonging to the Second Declension.

NOM.	GEN.	MEANING.
adharc	adhairce	a horn
bábóg	bábóige	a doll
cailleac	caillige	an old woman

NOM.	GEN.	MEANING.
uadac	uaidce	a vat
uealb	ueilbe	a form
uealg	ueilge	a thorn
ueoc	uige	a drink
uion	uine	protection
uoinneann	uoininne	bad weather
uieac	uieice	face, visage
earóg	earóige	a weasel
feact	feicte	time, occasion
fealg	feirge	anger
feuróg	feuróige	beard
fitceall	fitcille	chess
pleao	plerbe	a feast
plearg	fleirge	wreath
fneum	fneime	a root
fuinneog	fuinneoige	window
fuinnreog	fuinnreoige	an ash
fuireog	fuireoige	a lark
gadlóg	gadlóige	a little fork
gaoc	gaointe	wind
gealac	gealaise	moon
geug	geige	branch
gios	gise	squeak
geirpeac	geirrige }	girl
giorrac	giorraige }	
glun	glúine	knee
grian	gréine	sun
gruag	gruaise	hair
iall	éille	thong
ingean	ingine	daughter
lám	lámhe	hand
lapóg	lapóige	match (light)
laac	laicce, laicaise	mud, mire
leac	leice	a stone flag
leac	leice	half, side
long	luinge	ship
lúb	lúibe	loop
luc	luice	mouse
meup	méipe	finger
muc	muice	pig
neam	neime	heaven

NOM.	GEN.	MEANING.
óinreac oimóς	óinriže oimóιže	fool (f.) thumb
piarτ piarτóς piob pluc pós	péirte piarτóιže píbe pluice póιže	reptile worm musical pipe cheek kiss
riap	riéipe	order, regulation
rál realg reapc reirreac rgeac rgian rgiam rgiact rgórnac rgpiob rion rlac roineann rpeal rplanc	ráile reilže reirce reirriže rgeice rgine rgéime rgéito rgórnaiže rgpibe rine rlaite roinne rreile rplance	heel hunt love plough hawthorn bush knife comeliness shield throat scrape weather rod fine weather scythe spark, thunderbolt.
rrón	{rróine rróna	nose
raob	raoibe	side
ceuo	céioe	string
tonn	tuinne	wave
treab	treibe	tribe
ub	uibe	an egg

### Appendix III.

#### NOUNS BELONGING TO THE THIRD DECLENSION.

- (a) All personal nouns ending in óir, úir,  
 (b) All abstract nouns ending in áct.  
 (c) Verbal nouns in áct, áil, and ánia'n.  
 (d) The following list:—

NOM.	GENITIVE.	MEANING
áct	ácta	decrey
ánim	ánma	name

NOM.	GENITIVE.	MEANING.
airíoc	airíste, airíasta	repayment, restitution
altóir	altóira	altar
anál	anála	breath
anam	anma	soul
aoib	aoibá	Hugh
aoir	aoira	folk, people
áit	áta	ford
beannaíct	beannaícta	blessing
bain-ríogán	bain-ríogána	queen
bior	beaira	a (cooking) spit
bíct (bíot)	beáta	life
bláct	bláta	blossom
bliadóin	bliadóina	a year
blioíct	bliotáta	butter-milk
bot	boáta	tent, cot
briú	briúga	palace, mansion
buaíall	buaíalla	boy
buaib	buaibá	victory
buaibíre	buaibíreáta	trouble.
caibair	caibíra caibíre	help
cáin	cána	tax
Cáirí	Cáiríga	Easter
caí	caíta	battle
cíon	ceana	love, desire, affection
cíor	cíora	rent
cíct, m. (cíot)	ceáta	shower
cleair	cleaira	a trick
cliaínaí, m.	cliaínna	son-in-law
cnáin	cnáína	bone
coiblaib	coiblaíra	sleep
cóir	cóira	justice
connraib	connraíra	compact, covenant
corraí	corraíra	defence
cráib	cráíra	torture, destruction
crior	criára	belt
criú	criúta	form
cuaíre	cuaíra (or cuaíre)	visit
cuib	cuibá	part, share
oáil	oála	account, meeting
oáin	oána	destiny
oac	oáta	colour
oanain	oanína	make or shape
oiairíu	oiairíuá	Dermot
oíctúir	oíctúra	doctor
oíúct	oíúcta	dew
oíuin, m.	oíuina	a back

NOM.	GENITIVE.	MEANING.
éaric	éarica	tax, tribute
éuo	eúda	jealousy
euloó	euloóda	escape, elopement
fát	fáta	cause, reason
feapic	feapica	a grave, tomb
feapicainn	feapicanna	rain
feiróm	featóma	service, use
feoil	feola	flesh, meat
fiacail	fiacla	a tooth
fion	fíona	wine
fior	feapa	knowledge
flait	fláta	prince
foḡ	foḡa	a sudden attack
foḡluim	foḡlumta	learning
fóḡmaó	fóḡapta	{ decree
fuaḡmaó	fuaḡapta	
fuaḡt, m.	fuaḡta	announcement
fuaḡlaó	fuaḡluigte	cold
fuaḡ	fuaḡta	ransom, redemption
fuil	fola	hatred
		blood
gleann	gleanna	valley
ḡníom	ḡníoma	act, deed
ḡoin	ḡona	wound
ḡiáó	ḡiáda	love
ḡieim, m.	ḡieama	a piece
ḡruḡ	ḡrota	curds
ḡul	ḡola	weeping
ḡuḡ	ḡota	a voice
iaḡmaíó	iaḡmaóda	a desire, request
iaḡ	iaḡta	land, country
iomáin	iomána	hurling (a game)
iompaíó	iompaíóte	report, notice
leabao, f.	leabta	a bed
leacḡ	leacḡta	a grave
lionn	leanna	beer, ale
lior	leapa	a fort
loḡ	loḡa	lake
loḡt	loḡta	reproach
lor	lorpa	an herb
maíóm	maíoma	defeat, rout
maíteam	maíte	forgiveness
meap	meapa	esteem

NOM.	GENITIVE.	MEANING.
mian	miana	desire
mil	miala	honey
moó	moóla	manner
móin	móna	bog
muiy	maia	sea
óy	óya	a young person
olann	olna	wool
ollamain	ollamna	instruction
onóin	onóna	honour
orólaó	oróailte	admission, opening
naó	naóla	luck
neaó, m.	neaóla	law
rioó	neaóla	a form
nié	neaóla	running
raímaí,	raíma	an equal, like
Saímaí	Saíma	November
íáa	íáa	shadow
íoa	íoa	flower
íal	íala	a space of time
íoc	íaca	frost
íóóáin	íóóána	peace
íioó	íleaóla	posterity
ímaó, m.	ímaóla	a curb
ímaí	ímaíma	a swim
íóy	íóya	pleasure
ímaí	ímaíla	a layer
íón	íóna	nose
ííuó	ííuóla	stream
taíllíúy	taíllíúya	tailor
taín	taína	a drove
tioníam	tioníamla	purpose, project
toil	toila	a will
tráíy	tráíya	a strand
tréaó	tréaóla	flock, drove
tréoy	tréoya	guide, troop
tréuy	tréuya	battle
tríoy	tríoya	fight, quarrel
Tuam	Tuama	Tuam
Tuaó	Tuaóla	tribe
uaíy	uaíma	cave
uó	uóla	breast

## Appendix IV.

## THE NOUNS OF THE FIFTH DECLENSION.

The letters in brackets give the termination of the genitive singular.

- aḡ or aḡa, gen. aḡann, a river ;  
 pl. aḡbne or aḡbneaca.  
 aontā(-ō), license, permission.  
 aḡa(-n), Isle of Arran ; pl. aḡne,  
 The Arran Isles.  
 aḡa(-n), kidney.  
 beoḡi (beoḡac), beer.  
 ḡaḡa(ō), m., the upper part of  
 the breast.  
 bḡeicēam(an), m., a judge.  
 bḡó(-n), a quern, handmill ; pl.  
 bḡóinte.  
 caoḡa(ē), a sheep ; pl. caoḡiḡ.  
 caḡa(ō), a friend ; pl. cáḡiḡe.  
 caḡaiḡ(-ēḡac), a city, fortress.  
 caḡaoḡi(-ḡeac), a chair.  
 ceapḡca(-n), a forge, smithy.  
 ceatḡmaḡa(-n), a quarter.  
 claiḡ(-ḡac), a furrow.  
 cóiḡiḡ(-ḡeac), a feast.  
 comḡḡa(-n), neighbour ; pl.  
 comḡḡain.  
 comḡa(-ē), a gate, door.  
 comḡa(-n), a coffer, cupboard,  
 coffin.  
 corḡin(-nac), a crown.  
 cḡáin(-nac), a sow.  
 cú, gen. con, a hound ; pl.  
 con, cona, hounds.  
 cúil(-ac), a corner.  
 cuḡle(-ann), a pulse, vein.  
 oáileam(-an), a cup-bearer.  
 oaiḡ(-ac), an oak.  
 oéáḡna(-n), palm of the hand.  
 oíle(-ann), flood, deluge ; pl.  
 oíleanna, oíleanaca.  
 ealaḡa(-n), science, learning.  
 eapḡonta(-ō), disagreement, dis-  
 obedience.  
 eapcú (compound of cú), an eel.  
 eḡiḡi(-ḡeac), an oyster.  
 eoḡaiḡ (eoḡac), a key.  
 eoḡna(-n) [or gen. same as nom.],  
 barley.  
 realḡam(-an), m., philosopher.  
 feicēam(an), m., debtor.  
 ḡeoḡi(-ac), The Nore.  
 ḡioḡaiḡ(ac), a sign, mark.  
 ḡice(aō), twenty.  
 ḡoḡail(ḡlac), plunder.  
 ḡaḡa(-n), m., a smith ; pl. ḡaḡbne.  
 ḡḡáin (ḡḡánaac), hatred.  
 ḡuaḡa(-n), a shoulder ; pl.  
 ḡuaiḡne, ḡuaḡilleaca.  
 ionḡa(-n), a nail (of the finger) ;  
 pl. ionḡne.  
 laḡa(-n), a duck.  
 láḡi (láḡac), a mare.  
 lánaḡa(-n), a married couple.  
 laḡaiḡ (laḡiḡac), a flame.  
 láḡaiḡ (láḡiḡac), a level plain.  
 leaca(-n), m., a cheek ; pl.  
 leacaineaca.  
 luḡḡa(-n), the shin ; pl. luḡiḡne.  
 mainḡḡiḡ(-ḡeac), a monastery.  
 meanḡa(-n), the mind.  
 míle(-aō), a soldier, warrior.  
 náḡna(-ō), an enemy ; pl. náḡḡe.  
 nooḡaiḡ (nooḡaḡ), Christmas.  
 ollam(-an), a doctor, professor.  
 peapḡa(-n), a person.  
 ḡaḡḡail (ḡaḡḡlac), a rule.  
 ḡoḡa(-n), a choice ; pl. ḡoḡnaaca,  
 ḡoḡaineaca.  
 ḡail (ḡalac), a beam.  
 ḡeanḡa(-n), a cormorant.  
 ḡtail (ḡtalac), a stallion.  
 ḡál(-ac), a wedge.  
 ḡalaḡ, gen. ḡalḡan, land.  
 ḡeaimaiḡ (ḡeaimḡac), Tara.  
 ḡeanḡa(-n or ō), tongue ; pl.  
 ḡeanḡca.  
 ḡeoḡa(-n), boundary, limit.  
 uille(-ann), an elbow.  
 ulḡa(-n), a beard.  
 uḡḡa(-n), a door-jamb.



## Appendix V

## A LIST OF IRREGULAR VERBAL NOUNS.

VERB	MEANING.	VERBAL NOUN
αβαιρ αομνιζ	say confess	ῥάο αομνάιτ
βαιν βειρ βλιζ βρμιτ βυαίν	snatch, take* bear, carry milk cook reap,	βαιντ βρειτ βλιζιαν βρμιτ βυαίντ
caill cait ceannuiζ ceit céim cinn claoiό coimeuo	lose throw, open, consume buy conceal step determine defeat watch, guard	cailleamain caiteam, caiteao ceannac ceit céim cinneamain claoi coimeuo
coiruiζ coirζ compiac coζair congδaib coiruiζ copain cpero cuip	bless prevent fight whisper keep stir, move defend believe put, send	{coirueagan coirueagao corζ compiac coζair congδáit coiruiζε copam, copaint cperoeamaint cup
ceapmav viol onuiο ouirζ	forget sell shut (M. move towards) awake	ceapmav viol onuiοim ouireact, ourζao
éaz éiliζ éiruζ éipt	die claim rise, arise listen	éaz éileam, éiliuζao éiruζε éipteact
faζ fáz fan	find, get leave wait	faζáit fázáit fanamaint

\* To take a thing not offered is "βαιν;" but when offered, "ζλαο."

VERB.	MEANING.	VERBAL NOUN.
fár	grow	fár
feao	whistle	feaoḡail
feap	pour out, shower	feapṫain
feic	see	feicpint
feuc	behold, look	feucaint
fiafpuig	ask, enquire	fiafpuigḡe
foḡluim	learn	foḡluim
foill	suit, fit	foillleamaint
fóir	help, succour	fóirṫin
fneapṫail	attend, serve	fneapṫail
fuaig	saw	fuaḡail
fuaḡair (fóḡair)	announce, proclaim	{ fuaḡairṫe, fuaḡma
fulang	suffer	{ fúḡma fulang
ḡaḡ	take, go	ḡaḡail
ḡáir	call, shout	ḡáirim
ḡeall	promise	ḡeallamain
ḡéim	bellow, low	ḡéimneac or ḡéimeacḡ
ḡlaoo	call	ḡlaooac
ḡluair	journey, go	ḡluaracṫe
ḡoil	weep	ḡoil
ḡuirḡ	pray	ḡuirḡe
iair	try, ask, entreat	iairṫaḡ
impeap	contend, wrestle	impeapḡail
imṫig	go away	imṫeacṫe
innir	tell	innpint
iomcáir	carry	iomcáir
iompuig	turn	iompóḡ
foc	pay	foc
ional	wash	ionalac
ionnpuig	approach	ionnpuigḡe
ic	eat	icḡe
leag	knock down	leagan
lean	follow	leanamaint
léig	let, allow	léigean
ling	leap	ling
lomair	strip, pull off	lomairṫe, lomṫaḡ
luig	lie (down)	luigḡe
mair	live, exist	{ mairneacṫain
maic	forgive	{ mairṫain
meap	think	{ mairṫeair meap

VERB	MEANING.	VERBAL NOUN.
οἰλ όλ	nourish drink*	οἰλεᾶμαι όλ
πείρ πείρομαι	sell	πείρ
πιννέ	arrange	πείρομαι
πιν	dance	πιννέ
μῖτ	run	μῖτ
μοῖνν	divide	μοῖνν
φάοι	think	φάοι
φάρ	stand	φάρ
φείνν	play (an instrument)	φείνν
φῆ	separate	φῆ
φῆμι	destroy, erase	φῆμι
φῆμι	cease	φῆμι
φῆμι	walk	φῆμι
φῆμι	slay	φῆμι
φῆμι	swim	φῆμι
φῆμι	stop	φῆμι
φῆμι	sit	φῆμι
τάβαι	give	τάβαι
ταίρι	offer	ταίρι
ταίρι	draw	ταίρι
ταίρι	teach, instruct	ταίρι
ταίρι	fling	ταίρι
ταίρι	wind	ταίρι
τάρι	lift	τάρι
τάρι	search for, pursue	τάρι
τάρι	forsaken, abandon	τάρι
τάρι	understand	τάρι
τάρι	earn, deserve	τάρι
τάρι	alight, descend	τάρι

## Appendix VI.

### A LIST OF VERBS BELONGING TO FIRST CONJUGATION.

βᾶ, stop, hinder, meddle.  
 βᾶν, snatch, take.  
 βᾶν, drown.  
 βᾶν, bawl.  
 βᾶν, soften.

βᾶν, milk.  
 βᾶν, break.  
 βᾶν, bruise.  
 βᾶν, beat.  
 βᾶν, give success.

\* Drunk, meaning intoxicated, is not όλτα, but "αμ μετῆγε."

caill, lose.  
 caoin, lament.  
 caic, waste, spend, eat or cast.  
 cam, bend, make crooked.  
 can, sing.  
 caoc, blind.  
 cap, twist, turn, wind, wry.  
 ceap, think.  
 ceao, allow, leave, permit.  
 ceil, hide, conceal.  
 cinn, resolve.  
 cíon, comb.  
 claoib, defeat.  
 claon, bend, crook.  
 coirg, stop, hinder.  
 crait, shake.  
 crio, hang.  
 creio, believe, trust.  
 criú, tremble, quake.  
 crom, bend stoop, -  
 crom ari, set about.  
 cum, form; shape.  
 cuir, put, send.  
 cuir an bun, establish.  
 cuir caoi ari, mend.

dao, condemn, blame.  
 deairb, ascertain, assure.  
 deairc, look, observe, remark.  
 deairmao, forget.  
 oing, press, stuff, push.  
 díol, sell.  
 dóig, burn, consume.  
 doir, spill, shed.  
 duir, shut, move.  
 duat, plait, fold.  
 dún, close

éir, listen.

fair, watch, guard.  
 fairg, squeeze, crush.  
 fan, stay, wait, stop.  
 fár, grow.  
 feao, whistle.  
 feall, deceive, cheat.  
 feann, flay, strip.  
 fear, pour out, shower.  
 feuc, behold, look.

fill, return, come back.  
 feudaim, I can.  
 fluic, wet, moisten, drench.  
 foill, suit, fit.  
 fóir, help, relieve, succour.  
 fogluim, learn.

gair, shout, call.  
 geall, promise.  
 gearr, cut.  
 géill, obey, submit.  
 glac, take, reserve.  
 glan, cleanse.  
 glaoib, call.  
 gluair, journey, travel, go.  
 goir, steal.  
 goir, weep, lament.  
 goin, wound.  
 graid, sign, mark.  
 gair, pray.

iair, ask, seek, request, be  
 seach.  
 foc, pay, atone.  
 ic, eat

lar, light, kindle, blaze.  
 leag, throw down.  
 lean, follow, pursue.  
 léig, read.  
 léig, grant, suffer, permit.  
 léim, leap.  
 ling, leap, bounce, start.  
 lion, fill, surfeit, cram.  
 loirg, singe, scorch, burn.  
 lúb, bend, crook.  
 lui, lie.

mair, last, exist, remain.  
 maib, kill, murder.  
 maic, forgive.  
 maot, wet, steep.  
 meall, deceive, defraud.  
 meap, estimate, think.  
 meac, fade, wither.  
 mill, spoil, destroy.  
 mol, praise.  
 múin, teach, instruct.

near̃s, tie, join.  
nĩs̃, wash.

oĩl, nurse, cherish.  
oĩr, suit, fit.  
ól, drink.

pléar̃s, crack.  
pós, kiss.  
poll, pierce, penetrate.  
pneab, spring, leap.

peic, sell.  
peub, tear, burst.  
pĩr, run, flee.  
poinn, divide.  
puais̃, pursue, rout.

ráit, thrust, stab.  
raoĩl, rĩl, reflect, think.  
raor̃, deliver.  
r̃saor̃l, loose, let go.  
r̃suĩr, cease, desist.  
reap, stand.  
réio, blow.

reot, teach, drive, sail.  
reinn, play (music).  
r̃saor̃, separate, divide.  
r̃s̃uĩob, write.  
r̃s̃uĩor, sweep, scrape, destroy.  
rĩl, drop, let fall, sink.  
rĩn, stretch, extend.  
rméio, beckon, wink.  
r̃luĩs̃, swallow.  
r̃nám, swim, float.  
r̃eao, stop.  
r̃eao oe, desist.  
r̃uĩó, sit.

taĩr̃s̃, offer.  
tacet, choke.  
teĩt, flee.  
tõs̃, choose, select.  
tós, take up, lift.  
t̃neab, plough, till.  
t̃néis̃, forsake, abandon.  
t̃noio, fight, quarrel.  
tuĩs̃, understand.  
tuĩl, earn, deserve.  
tuĩt, fall.

## Appendix VII.

### LIST OF SYNCOPATED VERBS.

as̃aĩr, entreat (avenger).  
aĩtĩn, recognize.

bas̃aĩr, threaten.

car̃saĩr, slaughter.  
ceang̃aĩl, bind.  
cĩgĩl, tickle.  
coĩgĩl, spare.  
coroĩl, sleep.  
cor̃aĩn, defend.  
cuĩmĩl, rub.

oĩbĩr, banish.

eĩtĩl, fly.

rós̃aĩn, serve.  
r̃neas̃aĩr, answer.  
r̃neap̃oĩl, attend, serve.  
(r)or̃gaĩl, open.  
ruas̃aĩr, proclaim.  
r̃uĩaĩng, suffer.  
rur̃gaĩl, relieve.

innĩr, tell.  
ingĩl, graze.  
imĩr, play.  
iom̃c̃aĩr, carry.  
ioob̃aĩr, offer.

λαβαίη, speak.  
λομαίη, strip, bara.

μύρσαι, awaken.

παταίη, trample.  
φεαίν, avoid.

τομαί, consume, eat.  
τοθαί, root.  
ταρραίνε, draw.  
τιονόι, gather.  
τοθμαί, wind.  
τσιπλινε, descend.

## Appendix VIII.

### ENDINGS OF THE REGULAR VERBS IN PRESENT-DAY USAGE.

#### Broad Terminations.

##### Imperative.

SING.	PLU.
1. —	{-αμαδοίη (-αμουίη). -αμ.
2. [root]	-αίῶ
3. -αῶ.	-αίῳίη, -αῶδοίη.

##### Present Tense.

1. -αίμ.	-αμαδοίῳ, -αμουίῳ.
2. -αίη.	-αην ρίῶ.
3. -αην.	-αίῳ.

##### Imperfect.

1. -αίην.	-αμαδοίη (-αμουίη).
2. -εά.	-αῶ ρίῶ.
3. -αῶ.	-αίῳίη (-αῶδοίη).

##### Past.

1. -αί.	-αμαί.
2. -αί.	-αθαί.
3. [no ending]	-αῶαί.

##### Future.

1. -αῶ.	-αμαδοίῳ (-αμουίῳ)
2. -αίη.	-αίῶ ρίῶ.
3. -αίῶ.	-αίῳ.

##### Conditional.

1. -αίην	-αμαδοίη (-αμουίη).
2. -αί.	-αῶ ρίῶ.
3. -αῶ	-αίῳίη (-αῶδοίη).

#### Slender Terminations.

##### Imperative.

SING.	PLU.
1. —	{-ίμίη (-εαμουίη). -εαμ.
2. [root]	-ίῶ.
3. -εαῶ.	-ίῳίη.

##### Present Tense.

1. -ίμ.	-ίμίῳ (-ίμου).
2. -ίη.	-εαην ρίῶ.
3. -εαην.	-ίῳ.

##### Imperfect.

1. -ίην.	-ίμίη (-ίμου).
2. -εά.	-εαῶ ρίῶ.
3. -εαῶ.	-ίῳίη.

##### Past.

1. -εαί.	-εαμαί.
2. -ί.	-εαθαί.
3. [no ending]	-εαῶαί.

##### Future.

1. -εαῶ.	-ίμίῳ (-ίμου).
2. -ίη.	-ίῶ ρίῶ.
3. -ίῶ.	-ίῳ.

##### Conditional.

1. -ίην.	-ίμίη (-ίμου).
2. -εά.	-εαῶ ρίῶ.
3. -εαῶ.	-ίῳίη.

## Appendix IX.

## EARLY MODERN FORMS OF THE VERBS.

## IS.

We give only those forms which have not already been given in the body of the Grammar.

**Dependent Present:** -μab; (as in ζυμab, *that it is*, ραμab, *to which or whom it is*; μunab, *if it is not*).

**Obsolete Dependent Present:** -αὐ; (as in ζοναὐ, *that it is*, ραναὐ, *to which or whom it is*). This form occurs frequently in early modern writers. A remnant of it is found in the word ζιού or ζιό, *though it is*.

**Past:** ρα.

The form ρα of the past though frequently found in early modern writers is now obsolete.

**Dependent Past:** -μ βα (sometimes written -μ βο), as in ζυμ βα, *that it was*; ραμ βα, *to whom or which it was*; μunαμ βα, *if it was not*; αμ βα, *was it?* νίον βα, *it was not*.

The full form of the Dependent Past, though sometimes found in early modern writers is now contracted to -μδ' before vowels, and to -μ before consonants.

**Subjunctive:** ὐάμαὐ (ὐάμβαὐ), *if it were*; ζέμαὐ (ζέμβαὐ), *though it were*.

## τα.

## Imperative.

1. —	βίμῖρ, βίom.
2. βί.	βίό, βίόιό.
3. βίού	βίούρ.

## Present Tense.

ABSOLUTE.		DEPENDENT.	
1. ατάιμ	ατάμαοιο.	ρuiim	ρuiimio.
2. αταοι	ατάταοι.	ρuiε (-ιρ)	ρuiτι.
3. ατά	ατάιο.	ρui	ρuiιο.

## Habitual Present.

1. βίμ	βίμιο.
2. βίμ	βίτι.
3. βί(ό)	βίο.

## Past Tense.

ABSOLUTE.		DEPENDENT.	
1. βάουρ	βάμαρ.	ραβάρ	ραβαμαρ
2. βάουιρ	βάβאר.	ραβαιρ	ραβαβάρ.
3. βί	βάουαρ	ραιβε	ραβαουαρ.



**Future Tense.**

- |    |             |                  |
|----|-------------|------------------|
| 1. | bíad        | bíamadoir, bíam. |
| 2. | bíair       | bíadāoir.        |
| 3. | bíadō, bíad | bíadō.           |

Relative : bíair.

**Conditional—Secondary Future.**

- |    |             |            |
|----|-------------|------------|
| 1. | béinn       | béimír.    |
| 2. | béiteá      | bíadō ríō. |
| 3. | bíadō, beir | béiróir.   |

**Subjunctive Mood.****Present Tense.**

- |    |        |                   |
|----|--------|-------------------|
| 1. | maḃad  | maḃmadoir, maḃam. |
| 2. | maḃair | maḃāoir.          |
| 3. | maḃe   | maḃadō.           |

**ENDINGS OF THE REGULAR VERBS IN EARLY MODERN IRISH.**

The following is a table showing the various endings of the regular verbs in Early Modern Irish. It is not intended that these forms should be learned by the student; they are given merely for reference :—

**Broad Terminations. ♦****Imperative.**

- |    |        |             |
|----|--------|-------------|
|    | SING.  | PLU.        |
| 1. | —      | -am.        |
| 2. | [root] | -adō.       |
| 3. | -adō.  | -(a)ḃadōir. |

**Present Tense.**

- |    |       |             |
|----|-------|-------------|
| 1. | -aim. | -(a)madoir. |
| 2. | -air. | -āoir.      |
| 3. | -adō. | -adō.       |

**Imperfect**

- |    |        |             |
|----|--------|-------------|
| 1. | -ainn. | -amadoir.   |
| 2. | -adā.  | -āoir.      |
| 3. | -adō.  | -(a)ḃadōir. |

**Past.**

- |    |             |           |
|----|-------------|-----------|
| 1. | -ar.        | -amadair. |
| 2. | -air.       | -adāair.  |
| 3. | (no ending) | -adōair.  |

**Slender Terminations.****Imperative.**

- |    |        |           |
|----|--------|-----------|
|    | SING.  | PLU.      |
| 1. | —      | -eam.     |
| 2. | [root] | -iō.      |
| 3. | -eado. | -(i)ḃoir. |

**Present Tense.**

- |    |      |          |
|----|------|----------|
| 1. | -im. | -(i)míō. |
| 2. | -ir. | -í.      |
| 3. | -iō. | -iō.     |

**Imperfect.**

- |    |        |           |
|----|--------|-----------|
| 1. | -inn.  | -(i)míir. |
| 2. | -eā.   | -í.       |
| 3. | -eado. | -(i)ḃoir. |

**Past.**

- |    |             |            |
|----|-------------|------------|
| 1. | -ear.       | -eamadair. |
| 2. | -ir.        | -eāadair.  |
| 3. | (no ending) | -eadoair.  |

**Future.**

- |    |                                |   |
|----|--------------------------------|---|
| 1. | - $\rho\alpha\upsilon$ .       | - $\rho\alpha\mu$ ( $\alpha\sigma\iota\upsilon$ ) |
| 2. | - $\rho\alpha\iota\eta$ .      | - $\rho\alpha\sigma\iota$ .                       |
| 3. | - $\rho\alpha\iota\acute{o}$ . | - $\rho\alpha\iota\upsilon$ .                     |

**Future.**

- |    |                                  |  |
|----|----------------------------------|--|
| 1. | - $\rho\epsilon\alpha\upsilon$ . | - $\rho\epsilon\alpha\mu$ ( $\rho\iota\mu\iota\upsilon$ ). |
| 2. | - $\rho\iota\eta$ .              | - $\rho\iota$ .  |
| 3. | - $\rho\iota\acute{o}$ .         | - $\rho\iota\upsilon$ .                                    |

**Conditional.**

- |    |                               |   |
|----|-------------------------------|---|
| 1. | - $\rho\alpha\iota\eta\eta$ . | - $\rho\alpha\mu\alpha\sigma\iota\eta$ .            |
| 2. | - $\rho\acute{\alpha}$ .      | - $\rho\alpha\sigma\iota$ .                         |
| 3. | - $\rho\alpha\acute{o}$ .     | - $\rho\alpha\upsilon\sigma\alpha\sigma\iota\eta$ . |

**Conditional.**

- |    |                                   |                             |
|----|-----------------------------------|-----------------------------|
| 1. | - $\rho\iota\eta\eta$ .           | - $\rho\iota\mu\iota\eta$ . |
| 2. | - $\rho\epsilon\acute{\alpha}$ .  | - $\rho\iota$ .             |
| 3. | - $\rho\epsilon\alpha\acute{o}$ . | - $\rho\iota\upsilon\eta$ . |

**Irregular Verbs.**

It is principally in the future tense that the inflexions of the irregular verbs in Early Modern Usage differ from the forms now generally used.

**Future Tense.**

- |    |                   |  |
|----|-------------------|--|
| 1. | (no termination)  | $\alpha\mu$ (- $\mu\alpha\sigma\iota\upsilon$ ). |
| 2. | $\alpha\iota\eta$ | $\tau\alpha\sigma\iota$ .                        |
| 3. | $\alpha$          | $\alpha\iota\upsilon$ .                          |

The following verbs took no inflexion in the 3rd person singular of the present time. The forms in brackets are the dependent forms:—

$\upsilon\omicron$ - $\delta\epsilon\iota\eta$  ( $\tau\alpha\delta\alpha\iota\eta$ ),  $\upsilon\epsilon\iota\eta$  ( $\alpha\beta\alpha\iota\eta$ ),  $\upsilon\omicron$ - $\xi\epsilon\iota\delta$  ( $\rho\alpha\xi\alpha\iota\delta$ ,  $\rho\alpha\xi\acute{o}\alpha\eta\eta$ ),  $\upsilon\omicron$ - $\xi\eta\acute{\iota}$ ,  $\upsilon\omicron$ - $\acute{\epsilon}\acute{\iota}$  ( $\rho\alpha\iota\epsilon$ ), ( $\epsilon\lambda\upsilon\eta$ ),  $\tau\iota\varsigma$ ,  $\tau\acute{\epsilon}\iota\upsilon$ .

The following had no inflexion in the 1st person singular past tense:—

$\alpha\upsilon\upsilon\delta\alpha\eta\tau$ , ( $\upsilon\upsilon\delta\alpha\eta\tau$ ),  $\alpha\tau\epsilon\omicron\eta\eta\alpha\epsilon$  ( $\rho\alpha\epsilon\alpha$ )  $\tau\acute{\alpha}\eta\alpha\varsigma$ ,  $\epsilon\upsilon\alpha\lambda\alpha$ ,  $\rho\acute{\alpha}\eta\alpha\varsigma$ .

# INDEX.

The numbers refer to the paragraphs.

- Δ, voc. part.*, 21*d*.  
*Δ, poss. adj.*, 522.  
*Δ, rel.*, 26*e*, 233, &c., 546, 554.  
*Δ, part.*, 169.  
*Δ, prep.*, 605(2).  
*Δβ*, 339.  
*ΔβΔ*, 119.  
*ΔβΔιη*, 35*c*, 355.  
*ΔβηΔιημ*, 357.  
*Δβυρ*, 436.  
*-Δδ*, 467*a*.  
*Δδτ ζο*, 550.  
*Δδειημ*, 357.  
*ΔδτυΔιδ*, 441.  
*ΔδυδΔιητ*, 359.  
*Δζ*, 191, 217, 617.  
*ΔζΔ*, 544.  
*ΔζΔιδ*, 86, 89.  
*Δζομ*, 191.  
*Δζυρ*, 154, 628(2).  
*Διδ*, 88.  
*Διζτε*, 86.  
*Διλε*, 10, 43*d*.  
*Διηρε*, 166.  
*Διη:ρεοδΔο*, 297.  
*ΔιηγεΔι*, 65.  
*Διημ*, 43(4), 104.  
*Διτ*, 14, 84, 530 (*note*).  
*Διβα*, 129, 473(2).  
*Διλυιηη*, 35*b*, 144.  
*Δμ*, 104.  
*Δμ (Διμ)*, *prefix.* 455.  
*Δμ*, *ΔμΔδ*, 433.  
*Δμαδ*, 433.  
*-ΔμΔιλ*, 467*c*.  
*ΔμΔιηη*, 172.  
*ΔμΔηΔδ*, 434.  
*ΔμδΔδ*, 433.  
*Δμυιδ*, 433.  
*Δμυιζ*, 433.  
*Δη, intens part.*, 161.  
*Δη, def. art.*, 39, 40, 470, &c.  
*Δη, interrog. part.*, 26*e*.  
*ΔηΔιλ*, 438.  
*ΔηΔμ*, 104.  
*Δη-δυο*, 198.  
*ΔηρεΔηρ*, 441.  
*Δηοιυ*, 434.  
*ΔηιΔηη*, 441.  
*Δηιορ*, 436.  
*Δηη*, 39, 604, 627.  
*ΔηηηΔ*, 166.  
*Δηοδτ*, 434.  
*Δηοιη*, 441.  
*Δηοηηη*, 438.  
*ΔηυΔηρ*, 436.  
*Δοιδηηηη*, 35*b*, 144.  
*Δοιδηηηηρ*, 131.  
*Δοιηη*, 447.  
*Δοιη'ηηη*, 64.  
*ΔοιηηηηηΔδ*, 64, 241.  
*Δοιηηηηηη*, 166.  
*Δοη, numer.*, 172, 505, 509.  
*Δοη, indef. adj.*, 197, 200.  
*ΔοηΔδ*, 58.  
*ΔοηΔηη*, 177.  
*ΔοηηηΔδ*, 173, 504.  
*Δηη, poss. adj.*, 14, 26*a*, 522.  
*Δηη, pron.*, 237.  
*Δηη, interrog.*, 278.  
*Δηη, prep.*, 219, 578, 618.  
*Δηη, verb*, 423.  
*Δηη διτ*, 197.  
*Δηη ρεΔδ*, 613*d*.  
*Δηηο*, 166.  
*ΔηηοΔηη*, 42*d*.  
*Δηηουιζ*, 297, 315*d*.  
*Δηηηηηη*, 434.  
*Δηηηη*, 69.  
*Δηηηη*, 423.  
*Δηη*, 225, 919.  
*Δηη*, 154.  
*ΔδΔηηη*, 43(3), 132.  
*Δτδηηηη*, 390.

- ba (bó), 132.  
 ba (*verb*), 158, 334, 338, 340, 341.  
 bánoíri, 42c, 100.  
 baite, 113.  
 bailiḡ, 293.  
 bán, 165.  
 bárr, 14.  
 bar, 14.  
 beac, 79.  
 beaḡ, 166.  
 beaḡán, 198, 241.  
 bealač, 58.  
 bean, 132.  
 beap, 326.  
 beata, 131.  
 beirceap, 326.  
 beiróirí, 327.  
 béim, 87.  
 beiri, 342, 618(7c).  
 beirim, 347, 618(7b).  
 beirte, 177, 481.  
 beir, 327, 330.  
 béirceap, 326.  
 béirí, 327.  
 beirte, 284.  
 beo, 148.  
 biaó, 64.  
 bíoir, 322.  
 bíceap, 319, 322, 329.  
 bíceap, 324.  
 bící, 323.  
 bíláitche, 86.  
 bílátač, 86.  
 bó, 132.  
 bóčap, 65.  
 bman, 199.  
 bmač, 163.  
 bmačair, 132.  
 bmaḡ, 166.  
 bman, 64.  
 bmeirceam, 42b, 131.  
 bmanac, 486.  
 bmačap, 86, 131.  
 bmoó, 649.  
 bmuac, 56, 66.  
 bmuircean, 35a, 85.  
 bmuḡ, 316b.  
 buacail, 43(3), 105.  
 buairó, 43(4).  
 buail, 261, &c.  
 buailceap, 251.  
 bualaó, 289.  
 buircean, 35a, 85.  
 buin (bó), 132.  
 bur, 26a, 522.  
 cá, 26e, 278.  
 ca, 202.  
 ča, 600.  
 cačair, 35a.  
 cáč, 241.  
 cao, 243.  
 cao na čaoč, 435.  
 cao čuige, 435.  
 cao řáč, 435.  
 cairé, 243.  
 cailín, 43e, 111.  
 cail, 316e.  
 cailleač, 77.  
 cáin, 105, 131.  
 cáirce, 121.  
 caič, 316a.  
 čan, 600.  
 caoi, 114.  
 caoin, 315b.  
 caoir, 66.  
 caoiria, 125.  
 capall, 37, 69.  
 cár, 278.  
 čar, 600.  
 caria, 121.  
 carriaiḡ, 35a.  
 caroin, 433.  
 cačain, 433, 435.  
 cačair, 35a.  
 Cačaoir, 115.  
 cačaoir, 126.  
 cé, 243, 435.  
 ceačcap, 242.  
 ceao, 11.  
 céao, 14, 67, 175, 511.  
 céao (*first*), 167, 505.  
 ceann, 200b, 513.  
 ceannač, 293.  
 ceannuiḡ, 293.  
 ceap, 67.  
 ceapic, 41a, 78.  
 ceapic, 64, 654.  
 ceačair, 171.  
 ceačmar, 177, 481.

céile, 246.  
 céim, 87.  
 ceitíne, 508.  
 ceo, 132.  
 / ceoḁa (ceo), 132.  
 ceoḁana (ceo), 132.  
 ceol, 8, 67.  
 ceuto, 167, 505.  
 Ceutaoín, 417.  
 ceurto, 243.  
 cia, 202, 243, 245.  
 ciac (ceo), 132.  
 cia meuto, 202.  
 cibé, 237.  
 cím, 389.  
 cinn, 513.  
 cioca, 243, 435.  
 cionnur, 435, 557.  
 cit, 104.  
 ciúmaí, 88.  
 clann, 86.  
 clár, 68.  
 cleap, 104.  
 cliaḁain, 105.  
 coicéirí, 88.  
 cloinne, 86.  
 clor, 393.  
 cnám (cnáim), 93.  
 cneap, 64, 66.  
 cnoc, 63.  
 coḁail, 35c.  
 coḁlaḁ, 10.  
 coḁaḁ, 67.  
 coigil, 302, &c.  
 coigilt, 313.  
 coileac, 59.  
 coill, 89, 131.  
 coimlíon, 32 (note).  
 coin, 119.  
 cóir, 14, 145, 654.  
 coirḁ, 316b.  
 coirte, 14.  
 cóim, 154.  
 coimniḁte, 565.  
 cóimra, 131.  
 coimurraín, 119.  
 conao, 435.  
 connac, 392.  
 Connaḁta, 130.  
 connac, 392.

conḁraḁ, 105.  
 conur, 435.  
 coróin, 131.  
 cor, 76.  
 corain, 315c.  
 cóta, 110.  
 cré, 132.  
 creio, 316c.  
 créirdeana (cré), 132.  
 creioḁeao, 280.  
 creuto, 243.  
 criac (cré), 132.  
 crior, 98.  
 crioiḁe, 114.  
 críonaḁ, 131.  
 cuac, 131.  
 cuaḁtar, 411.  
 éuaí, 411.  
 éuala, 398.  
 eualaḁtar, 398.  
 cuan, 67.  
 cuio, 105, 198, 241, 524, &c.  
 cúig, 508.  
 cúigear, 177, 481.  
 'cuile, 242.  
 cúinne, 113.  
 cuir, 316b.  
 cuirim, 618(8).  
 cúir, 87.  
 cuirle, 124.  
 cum, 223, 620.  
 cun, 603.

ḁá, *numeral*, 514, &c.  
 ḁá (ḁo+ḁ), 544.  
 ḁá, *conj.*, 26e, 552.  
 -ḁa, 467d.  
 ḁaḁac, 86.  
 ḁaḁce, 86.  
 ḁaḁille, 43d.  
 ḁála, 603.  
 ḁálta, 603.  
 ḁaoi, 114.  
 ḁaoine, 114.  
 ḁar, 424.  
 ḁár, 278.  
 ḁara, 508.  
 ḁarḁ, 542.  
 ḁarḁaoín, 447.  
 ḁarḁas, 177, 481.

սաժ, 104.  
 Սէ (Սիւ), 132.  
 սե, 163, 227, 606(1), 621.  
 սեւաւոր, 145.  
 սեւծար, 411.  
 սեւջ, 493, 494(2).  
 սեւջար, 411.  
 սէն, 316a.  
 սեւրճիւնաւոր, 132.  
 սեւրճիւն, 132.  
 սեւրճիւն, 132.  
 սեւր, 387.  
 սեւրնար, 279, 381.  
 սեւ, 507.  
 սեւ, 87.  
 սեւ, 381.  
 սեւեւաւոր, 177.  
 սեւր, 357.  
 սեւրեւոր, 442.  
 սեւ, 86.  
 սեւ, 66, 200.  
 սեւ, 377.  
 Սիւ (God), 132.  
 սիւ (day), 448.  
 սիւ, 177, 481.  
 սիւեւոր, 314.  
 սիւն, 315a.  
 սիւ, 86.  
 սիւեւ, 141.  
 սիւեւ, 139.  
 սիւ, 114.  
 սո, numeral, 14, 171.  
 սո, poss. adj., 182, 521.  
 սո, prefix, 287, 455.  
 սո, before past tense, 276.  
 սո, prep. 188, 220, 606(1), 622.  
 սոճար, 427.  
 ս'սոճար, 427.  
 սոճ, 336.  
 սոճ, 315b.  
 սոյն, 199a.  
 սոլ, 415.  
 Սոննաճ, 447.  
 սոյնն, 199a.  
 սոյն, 65.  
 սոճար, 198.  
 սոճ, 114.  
 սոճ, 493, 494(2).  
 սոյն, 43(4), 101.  
 սոսոճ, 419.

սոսար, 87.  
 սոսար, 359.  
 սոսար, 359.  
 սոյն, 114.  
 սոլ, 415.  
 սոլ, 415.  
 սոն, 67, 315a.  
 է, 211, 535.  
 եւ, 70.  
 եւնաւ, 70.  
 եւ, 213.  
 էւտտոմար, 462.  
 էւ, 646.  
 էւտտոմար, 462.  
 էւտ, 649.  
 էն, 61.  
 էնաւ, 70.  
 էն, 114.  
 էւ, 65.  
 էւն(տ), 197.  
 էւ, 197.  
 էնն, 32, note.  
 էնն, 64, 241.  
 էն, 127, 475(2).  
 եւ, 238.  
 եւն, 131.  
 եւն, 58.  
 եւն, 61.  
 բ, 190, 228, 623.  
 բաւ, 279, 392.  
 բաւ, 376.  
 բաւար, 370.  
 բաւար, 392.  
 բաւ, 63.  
 բաւ, 166.  
 բաւ, 316f.  
 բաւ, 31 f, 368.  
 բաւ, 230.  
 բաւ, 388.  
 բաւ, 371.  
 բաւ, 14, 316a.  
 բաւ, 190, 228, 623.  
 բաւ, 290, 316a.  
 բաւ, 387.  
 բաւ, 392.  
 բաւ, 316f.  
 բաւ, 428.  
 բաւար, 425.

fearadh, 425.  
 fearamamh, 425.  
 fear, 62, 69.  
 féar, 14, 62.  
 fearamail, 147.  
 fearr, 11, 166.  
 fearc, 386.  
 féic, 66.  
 fearceam, 131.  
 fearceana, 396.  
 féig, 66.  
 féile, 106.  
 féin, 206.  
 fear, 87.  
 fearcint, 396.  
 fear, 316a.  
 fear, 99.  
 fear, 66.  
 fear, 175, 511.  
 fear, 163.  
 fear, 14, 97.  
 fear, 161.  
 fear, 32 (note).  
 fear, 433, 642.  
 fearceamail, 35b.  
 fear, 66.  
 fear, 43(4).  
 fear, 259.  
 fearcint, 259.  
 fear, 16.  
 fear, 166.  
 fear, 14.  
 fear, 83.  
 fear, 132.  
 fear, 132.  
 fear, 372.  
 fear, 94.  
 fear, 301.  
 fear, 313.  
 fear, 87, 90.  
 fear, 279.  
 fear, 372.  
 fear, 166.  
 fear, 321.  
 fear, 644.  
 fear, 166.  
 fear, 166.

fear, 132.  
 fear, 544.

fear, 316f, 364.  
 fear, 122.  
 fear, 290.  
 fear, 367.  
 fear, 201.  
 fear, 242.  
 fear, 201.  
 fear, 241.  
 fear (fear). 132.  
 fear, 580, 606(2), 624.  
 fear, 166.  
 fear, 115.  
 fear, 132.  
 fear, 132.  
 fear, 132.  
 fear, 141, 166.  
 fear, 37.  
 fear, 43(4).  
 fear, 365.  
 fear, 373.  
 fear, 80.  
 fear, 235.  
 fear, 452.  
 fear, 106.  
 fear, 166.  
 fear, 165.  
 fear, 161.  
 fear, 87.  
 fear, 379.  
 fear, 105.  
 fear, 379.  
 fear, 10, 114.  
 fear, conj., 26e, 275, 549.  
 fear, prep., 39, 625.  
 fear ceann, 613d.  
 fear de mar, 435.  
 fear, 315b.  
 fear, fear, 10, 166.  
 fear, 199.  
 fear, 43(4), 102, 200.  
 fear, 81.  
 fear, 316b.  
 fear, 278.  
 fear, 104.

1, 39, 186, 226, 604, 627  
 i, pron., 211.  
 i, noun. uá, 132.  
 i, prep., 579.  
 i, 440.



ιαρτάρ, 442.  
 ιοιρ, 229, 602(1), 628.  
 ιμβάμας, 434.  
 ιμεαίτα, 314.  
 ιν, *pronoun*, 238.  
 ιν, *prep.*, 39, 535, 627.  
 ιν (ιον) *prefix*, 286.  
 ινωέ, 434.  
 ιν-φειςρεαα, 396.  
 ινωιαυό, 449.  
 ιννιρ, 35c.  
 ιομασ, 198.  
 ιομαίτα, 198.  
 ιομωδ, 166, 493.  
 ιομτύρα, 603.  
 ιονά, 15c.  
 ιον-μολτα, 285.  
 ιονμυμ, 166.  
 ιοννυρ, 452.  
 ιορασ, 417.  
 ιρ, *conj.*, 170.  
 ιρ, *verb*, 156, 323, 584.  
 ίριολ, 141.  
 ιρτεαδ, 433, 436.  
 ιρτιζ, 433, 436.  
 ιτε, 416.  
 ιύσ, *pronoun*, 238.

λά, 132.  
 λαδαιρ, 35c, 315c.  
 λαδα, 123.  
 λαεε (λά), 132.  
 λαεεεαατα (λά) 132.  
 λαίγιν, 130.  
 λαιρτιζ, 438.  
 λαιρτεαρ, 441.  
 λαιρτιαρ, 411.  
 λαιτće, 86.  
 λάν, 198.  
 λαοέμασ, 70.  
 λαραιρ, 35a.  
 λαρταλλ, 438.  
 λαρτοιρ, 441.  
 λαρτωαυό, 441.  
 λαταδ, 86.  
 λε, 39, 154, 187, 221, 613d, 629.  
 λεαβασ, 105.  
 λεαδαιρ, 18, 69.  
 λεαc, 88.  
 λεαζ, 316d.

lean, 316c.  
 leand, 9, 64.  
 leanaamna, 290.  
 leapa, 105.  
 leap, 421.  
 learmuiζ, 438.  
 léiz, 316d.  
 léiz, 315a.  
 léim, 87.  
 léime, 113.  
 ler, 278.  
 lerb, 542.  
 lid, 166.  
 lil, 75.  
 líon, 67.  
 litir, 88.  
 ló (lá), 132.  
 loc, 15.  
 long, 10, 82.  
 luan, 447.  
 luc, 87.  
 luēt, 115.  
 luzā, 160, 166.  
 luib, 87.

μά, 21g.  
 mac, 64, 69, 487, etc.  
 macmaσ, 70.  
 maσaσ, 65.  
 maσoin, 35a.  
 maσom, 104.  
 máilin, 32 (note).  
 máirτ, 447.  
 maίρεαδ, 452.  
 maίτ, 143, 166.  
 maίτεαρ, 42d.  
 μάλα, 14, 110.  
 malλαēt, 94.  
 maσor, 55.  
 map, 21g, 453, 557.  
 -māp, 467b.  
 mapicaδ, 57.  
 mapcuizēaēt, 565.  
 mapzaσ, 9, 65.  
 máτaip, 132.  
 meacan, 66.  
 méap, 14.  
 meapa, 166.  
 mi, 132.  
 mile, 113, 175, 176, 511.

mltir, 144.  
 mill, 315a.  
 minic, 166.  
 mínig, 315e.  
 mionca, 166.  
 mionna (mí), 132.  
 miora (mí), 132.  
 mioroe, 163.  
 mire, 205.  
 mná, 132.  
 mo, 179, 521.  
 mó, 166.  
 móroe, 163.  
 móin, 103, 131.  
 mol, 315a.  
 molað, 289.  
 molta, 284.  
 móri, 137, 166.  
 móran, 198.  
 móri-ferre, 177.  
 muða, 433.  
 muio, 270.  
 múille, 113.  
 muirir, 115.  
 mullac, 58.  
 muna, 26e, 550.  
 munar, 278.  
 múr, 67.  
 na, 14, 40f.  
 ná, 14, 156.  
 ná zo, 452.  
 nac, conj., 26e.  
 nac, rel. pron., 235.  
 nacar, 278(6).  
 náma, 119.  
 naoi, 507.  
 naonbar, 177.  
 nári, 278(6), 549.  
 -ne, 184.  
 neac, 64.  
 neam-, prefix, 455.  
 neart, 64, 198, 650.  
 nearda, 166.  
 neim-, 455.  
 neim-geanamlaet, 462.  
 neul, 67.  
 ní, 21g.  
 ní, noun., 187, &c.  
 nic, 487. &c.

níð, 114, 157, 158  
 níðr, 278.  
 níðr, 157, 158.  
 noc, 234.  
 nó zo, 550.  
 nuad, 494(2).  
 nuair, 557.  
 O, pronoun, 238.  
 ó, noun, 132, 487, &c.  
 ó, prep., 189, 222.  
 obair, 35a, 88.  
 oet, 507.  
 ó ðear, 441.  
 oirce, 434.  
 oileán, 62.  
 oiread, 198.  
 oircear, 442.  
 ól, 316a.  
 olann, 35a.  
 olc, 166.  
 óráio, 88.  
 órta, 148.  
 órlac, 58.  
 ór, 632.  
 orzail, 298 (note),  
 ó tuair, 441.

páorais, 115.  
 pairir, 88.  
 páirc, 87.  
 paorac, 486.  
 'pé i 69.  
 peann, 66.  
 pearra, 120.  
 piúinn, 35a.  
 piúinn, 35a, 199.

radbar, 329.  
 radbar, 325.  
 radad, 412.  
 rána, 420.  
 rána, 420.  
 raib, 279, 325.  
 ráirte, 363.  
 raibar, 141.  
 réim, 87.  
 reub, 259.  
 ri, 32.  
 riactain, 421.

րաճեանար, 421.

րան, 64.

րաջիմ, 420.

րաջե, 132.

րոնո, 381.

րոջ, 161.

րոջա, 132.

րոժ, 290, 316a.

րո, 279.

րո, 161.

րոճեան, 421.

րոյն, 224, 633

րոյնի, 224.

րոյնոյ. 199.

րոջ, 279.

Տա(c)րան, 130, 473(2).

թաւոյն, 5b.

թաւ, 98.

թան, 238.

թաւ, 438.

թան, 238.

թան, 161.

Տաճարն, 447.

թաւ, 114.

թե, *pronoun*, 210.

թե, *numeral*, 508.

-թե, 184.

թաճե, 507.

թաճեար, 177, 481.

թամրոջ, 152.

-թան, 184.

թան, 494(2).

թան, 14.

թար, 316e.

թարթան, 205.

թարթար, 177, 481.

թո, 195, 238.

թո, 66.

թո, 67.

թաւ, 315b.

թաւ, 316c.

թաւ, 66, 67.

թաւ, 86.

թաւաւոյն, 42e.

թաւ, 86.

թաւ, 131.

թաւ, 88.

թաւ, 87.

թաւոյն, 280.

թաւ, 316b.

թի, 210.

թա, 166.

թաւ, 441.

թոյն, թոյն, 239.

թո, *adj.*, 14, 195

թո, *pronoun*, 238

թո, 14.

թոյն, թոյն, 239.

թոյն, 436.

թաւաւ, 35c, 290.

թաւ, 238.

թաւ, 132.

թաւաւ, 65.

թաւ, 66.

թաւ, 88

թաւ, 132.

թաւ, 131.

թաւոյն, 113.

թաւ, 65.

թաւաւ, 315b.

թաւ, 66.

թաւ, 316a.

թո, *adj.*, 195.

թո, *pron.*, 238.

թո, *prefix*, 286, 455

թաւ, 145.

թո, 195.

թո, 441.

թաւ, 89.

թաւ, 87.

թաւ, 64.

թաւոյն, 420.

թաւոյն, 420.

թաւ, 131.

թաւ, 104.

թաւ, 436.

թաւ, 238.

թաւ, 49(1), 90.

թաւ, 14, 551, 558.

թաւ, 14, 49(1), 90.

թաւ, 346.

թաւ, 400.

թաւ, 318.

թաւ, 103.

թաւ, 279, 399.

թաւ, 131.

թաւ, 438.

թաւ, 402.

ἐάνταρ, 403.  
 ταρ, *verb*, 399.  
 ταρ, *prep.*, 230, 634.  
 τάρη, 426.  
 τάταρ, 320.  
 τε, 148, 166.  
 τέ, 237.  
 τεαδ, 132.  
 τεαδτ, 406.  
 τεαδται, 400.  
 τεαται, 128.  
 τεαρ, 440, 441.  
 τέιξ, 408.  
 τειλξ, 316d.  
 τειμε, 113, 131.  
 τέιμιξ, 409.  
 τεο, 148, 166.  
 τιαρ, 440, 441.  
 τιοεαδτ, 406.  
 τιξ, 132.  
 τιξεαρηα, 112.  
 τίμ, 390.  
 τιμτεαλλ, 603.  
 τινнеар, 649.  
 тίοѳаδτ, 406.  
 τίρ, 89.  
 τирит, 166.  
 тiorma, 166.  
 ёior, 436.  
 тивѳiao, 351.  
 тобар, 68.  
 тоил, 92.  
 ёoir, 440, 441.  
 тоирξ, 603.  
 τρηαρηα, 603.

τρέ, 39, 231, 604, 635.  
 τρεар, 505.  
 τρεарηα, 603.  
 τρειρε, 166.  
 τρέιξ, 316d.  
 τρεун, 166.  
 τριύρ, 177, 481.  
 τροιξ, 76 (note).  
 τром, 162 462.  
 τριαилл, 88.  
 тү, 531.  
 туайо, 440, 441.  
 туайрсеарт, 442.  
 туар, 436.  
 туξ, 279.  
 түр, 89.  
 түрге, 166.  
 туиллеайо, 198.  
 турá, 205.

уа, 132.  
 уайр, 87.  
 уалад, 58.  
 уарат, 35b, 141.  
 уѳ, 88.  
 уѳаилл, 66.  
 үо, 196.  
 уи, 132, 489.  
 уиле, 197, 201.  
 уинге, 114.  
 уилайо, 130.  
 ум, 232, 636.  
 үр, 161.  
 урур, 166.  
 урá, 166.

---

Am n-a éur i gcló  
n' uá Caéail ašur v'á buiróean  
35 36 ašur 37 Spáio mór an t-áša,  
baile-áta-Cliait.







UC SOUTHERN REGIONAL LIBRARY FACILITY



**A** 000 025 595 0

